TESTIMONY

—TAKEN BY THE—

Senate Special Committee,

APPOINTED FOR THE PURPOSE OF INVESTIGATING THE

Management of the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane.

EIGHTEENTH SESSION, 1883.

LINCOLN, NEB.:
JOURNAL COMPANY, STATE PRINTERS.
1883.

TESTIMONY.

EXTRACT FROM SENATE JOURNAL.

JANUARY 29TH, 1883, PAGE 7.

* * * * * * * *

Mr. Conner offered the following resolution and on motion of Mr. McShane the rules were suspended and the same adopted:

"WHEREAS, It is asserted by divers and sundry persons that unlawful, severe, and brutal cruelty is exercised by the officers and employes of the Insane Asylum towards the patients therein confined and that great and unnecessary extravagance exists in the management of said institution, and

WHEREAS, The lawful, humane, and economical management of said institution is a matter of great public concern, therefore be it

Resolved, That a committee of three be appointed by the President of the Senate whose duty it shall be to investigate said charges and report the same to the Senate at as early a day as practicable; and for this purpose said committee is authorized to send for persons and papers."

* * * * * * * *

EXTRACT FRON SENATE JOURNAL.

JANUARY 30TH, 1883, PAGE 20.

"In accordance with the resolution previously adopted the Chair appointed Senators Conner, Rogers, and Schoenheit, a special committee to investigate and report upon the charges of unlawful, severe, and brutal cruelty against the inmates of the Asylum for the Insane as practiced by the officers and employes of that institution."

Testimony of Anton Houser.

Question. What is your name, and age, and where do you reside?

Answer. Anton Houser; I am 51 years old; reside in Lincoln.

Q. State if you have any personal knowledge of the management of the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and if so state how that knowledge was obtained?

A. Yes, got knowledge from seeing it.

Q. State if you have any personal knowledge of acts of neglect or cruelty being exercised by the officers or employes of the Nebraska Insane Asylum towards any of the patients therein confined?

A. I have, many.

Q. State specifically, and in detail what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of, and as near as you can the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. I seen several times, the guards throw the patients into the gangway, and I seen them outside several times too; once a patient come out and took hold of a mortar hoe, and then one of the guards took him by the arm, and took him away; the patient said "I am doing nothing wrong;" at the same time another guard come and punch him, the patient, in the stomach with his fist, and the third guard come and took hold of him, and all three of the guards threw him down, some of the guards choked him and hit him with their fists on the stomach.

Q. State the condition of the patient when he got up and what become of him?

A. When the patient got up he was all bloody; his neck and face full of blood. After this the patient walked away to lumber pile.

Q. State when this occurred as near as you can?

A. This was about July, 1882. Don't know the patient's name or the guard's name. He; the patient, had an Odd Fel-

low's pin. I did not see Dr. Mathewson there when this occurred. This occurred at the north wing of the Nebraska Insane Asylum. There were present at the same time Christ Koolr—Daily, foreman for Charles Bullock, who was doing the stone work on the north wing. I also saw two Bohemians.

Cross-examined by Dr. Mathewson:

I know Dr. Mathewson; don't know Dr. Hay; I did not let Dr. Mathewson know of this act of cruelty; I did not say anything to the officers at the Asylum, but did tell about it in Lincoln.

Q. Did the patient during the occurrence you have narrated show any disposition to fight or resist?

A. The patient did not show any fight or resistance.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. When one guard came did he go along with the guards?

A. Don't know whether he would or not; the second guard took a hold of him before he made a show to do anything.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Did the third guard come before they could get him away?

A. They did not try to get him away; all three of them threw him right down on the ground.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Do you know the man's name?

A. No sir, I do not.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Do you know where the blood came from that was on the patient's face?

A. Suppose it came from scratching about the face; his vest was torn off.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Which one of the guards scratched the patient?

A. I do not know which one of them it was; I think it was the third one, as he choked the patient and they threw him down.

ANTON HOUSER.

TESTIMONY OF CHRIST KULLER.

Q. State your name, age, and place of residence, and occupation?

A. My name is Christ Kuller; age 43 years; residence, Lincoln, Nebraska; occupation, daily laborer.

Q. State if you have any knowledge of acts of neglect or cruelty being exercised by the officers or employes of the Nebraska Insane Asylum towards any of the patients therein confined?

A. I have, I seen something.

Q. State what you saw, and when?

A. When I worked there I seen the attendants let the patients out; there come a patient to move the mortar-box, and told me this was hard work. I told the patient it was; the patient said he would try it; the patient took hold of the hoe and commenced to mix mortar; two of the attendants come and took hold of him; the patient told them to let him alone; they led him away, o hold of each arm; every now and then they punched him in the stomach with their fists; the patient bent down to prevent the strokes hurting him, and every now and then they straightened him up by jerking his head up; then the third attendant come; when the third one come they throwed the patient on the ground, and they choked him, and got their knees on his breast and stomach. I went to the attendants and told them to let the patient alone, he had done nothing, then they let him up, and one of the attendants come after me and threatened to whip me for interfering. The patient's clothes were torn, his neck was bloody, and he was bloody about the nose. The patient made considerable noise when they had him down. When he got up he cried and sat down on some lumber. He looked as though he was badly hurt, was blue in the face; looked as though he had not been in the Asylum long, did not look sickly.

Q. When was this?

A. About July or August, 1882.

Q. Do you know anything else?

A. Shortly before the last occurrence two of the patients were scuffling with one another; one of the attendants came and took one of the patients at back part of the head and kicked the patient in the knees and threw him down like a piece of wood. The patient got up, and in four or five minutes afterwards took the cramps, and they carried him in the house.

Q. Do you know anything else?

A. I don't remember anything else.

Q. Cross-examined by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Did they throw one or both of the patients down who were scuffling?

A. Threw one of them down.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Do you know me or Dr. Hays?

A. Don't know either of you.

Q. Do you know the attendant who was present?

A. Know them by sight, but not by name. The attendant who threw down the patient who was scuffling was one of the attendants who helped to throw the first man down I have testified about.

Q. Which one of the three who threw the first man down you have testified about was it who helped throw the second patient down?

A. Think it was the one who took the first patient I have testified to by the throat.

Q. Did you ever report these occurrences to any of the officers of the Asylum or state officers having charge of the Asylum?

A. I did not; don't know any of them.

CHRIST KULLER.

Testimony of Charles Sturm.

Q. State your name, age, and place of residence and occupation.

A. Charles Sturm, age, thirty-six years old; residence, Lincoln, Nebraska; occupation, teamster.

Q. State specifically and in detail, what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred.

A. I seen a case there at the Asylum with one patient and two attendants; the patient had a fit, and during the time he had a fit two of the attendants jumped onto him, one of them straddled him, laid right onto his breast, and the other one had a hold of him around his knees; the one who set straddle of him across his breast, took both thumbs and set them on the patient's throat and held him there for four or five minutes, the other one was punching or striking him wherever he could get a chance at him, reached around everywhere. Then the one that sat straddle of him jerked him up and the patient had some slippers around there, (he had lost them off) attendant said to patient, put on your slippers, the patient could not stand up alone for he was not out of the fit quite. Then the attendant took slippers and put them onto him, and when slippers were onto him he got right behind him and shoved him up to the door rapidly and he slung him down again right at the door. Then the other attendant come. Then I looked particularly to see what I could see; the second attendant helped take a hold of him. I went up close, I see the patient had b ood around his mouth and nose, then they took him into the door and shut the door. The last attendant walked back again to where the other patients were—about two minutes after the other attendant come out of the door again blowing and puffing. The patient was a strong, healthy man, would weigh about 180 pounds; have seen patient before, helped him out of a fit one time. Don't know his name.

By Mr. Schoenhite:

Q. What did the patient do at the time the attendants

jumped on him as you have testified to—explain particularly the patient's manner and acts.

A. The patient was down with a fit; he was lying still, only jerking a little with the fit at the time the attendants jumped onto him.

Q. Explain the particular acts of the attendants at the time they jumped onto the patient, whether it appeared to be in rudeness or whether it was necessary, as you saw.

A. I think it was not necessary for the patient was laying still there as any one would who had fits; did not do anything that I could see; it looked to me as though they would as leave choke him to death as not, so rapidly they went at him, punching and choking him; I did not say anything because I did not know I had a right to do so; had a notion to do so; did not interefere with the attendants, because I was afraid; they were big, strapping fellows.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. When did this occur?

A. This was last of November or first of December, 1882.

Q. Do you know me or Dr. Hay?

A. I do know both.

Q. Was either of us present at that time?

A. I did not see either of you.

Q. Do you know either of attendants' names?

A. I do not, but I do know them when I see them; do not know the patient's name.

Q. You say these were both large men?

A. One of them was large; the other a shortish man.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Did you ever report this case to the Asylum officials, or the Board of Public Lands and Buildings?

A. I did not report it at the Asylum or to the Board of Public Lands and Buildings; have talked with different men about Lincoln.

Q. Why did you not report this case to the officers of the public lands and buildings?

A. I was not acquainted with the officers.

Q. To whom did you report the case in town?

A. Don't know who; have mentioned it in a crowd.

Q. Did you ever express a wish that the officers might be informed of this case?

A. No, I did not; thought it was none of my business.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Are you sure the patient was thrown down at the door, or did he fall in resisting the attendant?

A. I am sure attendant slung him down; this was the large attendant?

C. STURM.

TESTIMONY OF ALECK BROSTROM.

Q. State your name, age, residence, and occupation.

A. Aleck Brostrom; aged 32 years; residence, Lincoln; occupation, teamster.

Q. State specifically and in detail what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. In the latter part of November or first part of December, 1882, I seen patients out exercising; looked at patients; saw a patient kind of playing with his slipper, and the attendant told him to put it on, then went up to him and got hold of slipper himself, looked away, don't know how patient got down. When I looked again, saw an attendant straddle of him across his breast; another attendant was sitting on his legs, striking him with his fists whenever he could get a chance to strike him; they had him down fully five minutes, and then raised him up and shoved him up towards the building and got him down again; did not

see them throw him down, but he was down when I saw him, and one of the attendants was choking him again (the one who choked him before), the second attendant was also there; a third attendant came up and said, don't strike him any more; then they let him loose and raised him up from the ground; he was so wore out he could not stand by himself, so they put him into the door of the Asylum.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Did either of the attendants choke him when he was first down?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How severely did the attendant choke him?

A. Choked him with both thumbs, so that he frothed at his mouth.

Q. Is this the only act of cruelty within your knowledge?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know either of the attendant's names?

A. No, sir.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Can you describe the two attendants?

A. One of them about five foot ten inches, the other about as tall but not so heavy—a pale looking fellow—heaviest one had moustache.

Q. Did you know me at that time, or Dr. Hay, or either of us?

A. I knew both of you?

Q. Was either of us present?

A. No; I did not see either of you; I saw Dr. Mathewson at the porch as I went along the building with my team before this occurred.

Q. You never said anything about it to Dr. Hay or I, did you?

A. No, sir.

Q. You knew it was an act of cruelty did you not? You knew I had the oversight of the patients did you not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Why did you not speak to me about it?

A. I was going to town; did not have time to do it; did not know I had the right to.

Q. Did you speak to any one about it?

A. No, sir.

Q. How did any one know about this circumstance?

A. I was working there almost all summer, and they knew I was working there; then they thought I seen some actions about it, and that is the reason they brought me up.

By Mr. Kendall:

Q. How far were you from the two attendants and the patient at the time they were choking him?

A. About fifty feet, not any more.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. You must have seen him all the time; then you stopped your team?

A. Yes, sir, I stopped the team.

ALECK BROSTROM.

TESTIMONY OF CHARLEY BERGSTROM.

Q. State your name, age, residence, and occupation.

A. Charley Bergstrom; aged 22 years; residence, Lincoln; occupation, day laborer.

Q. State specifically and in detail what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. One day about last of November, 1882, I saw good many patients out taking exercise, and saw one patient laying on the

ground, and two attendants were on him and beat him pretty bad; they beat him a good while and then raised him up and took him up to the house. I saw him down at the door again; don't know how he got down; the same attendants struck him and kicked him in the breast, stomach, and sides; one of the attendants said, "don't hurt him any more;" had him down at the door a few minutes; I thought some blood came from his nose, but I am not sure. This is all I saw; saw no other acts of cruelty to talk about.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. You only saw two men at the door?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know attendants?
A. No, I do not.

Q. Can you describe them?
A. No, I cannot.

Q. Do you know me or Dr. Hay?
A. I saw you out there; did not know whether you were a doctor or not.

Q. Did you see me or Dr. Hay at that time?
A. Think I saw you in crowd; was so busy did not look much.

Q. What was I doing?
A. Doing nothing; looking at the crowd. I am not sure I saw you; thought I did. This is the same case testified to by Charley Sturm and Alex. Brostrom.

Q. Was it near the door you saw me, or back in the yard where they first threw patient down?
A. It was back in the yard.

Q. Are you as sure you saw me there as you are of anything else you have sworn to?
A. No, I am not; I saw a person like you; he had white whiskers like you.

Q. What did that man do that you took for me?

A. He looked at the other patients in the yard who were taking exercise.

Q. Did you ever speak to Dr. Hay, or I, about this affair?

A. No, sir; I spoke to Mr. Brostrom and Charley Sturm.

Q. Was Mr. Daily there?

A. I don't know.

By A. G. Kendall: Having Dr. Mathewson stand up so witness could see him, asks the following question:

Q. Do you think this is the man you saw there?

A. I think Dr. Mathewson looks bigger than the man I saw there.

Q. Was the man you saw dressed like Dr. Mathewson?

A. Don't remember how he was dressed; was not dressed so very well.

CHARLEY BERGSTROM.

TESTIMONY OF MAJOR MOORE.

Q. State your name, age, place of residence, and occupation?

A. My name is Major Moore; aged 25; residence, Lincoln; at present time assistant janitor at State House.

Q. State specifically and in detail what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. About five years ago—this may have been only three years ago—it was the year Gen. Grant returned from his trip around the world, I was employed by Messrs. More & Krone, contractors for the south and north wing of the Insane Asylum. My business was mortar-making. During the time I was there it seemed to be a custom for the guards to take the patients out for exercise. One morning there was one patient who did not want to go the way they wanted him to go. The guard pulled

him around the way the guard wanted him to go. The patient made some effort to go in another direction. The guard flew into a passion and kicked the patient in the front part, about the bowels; the patient fell down; don't know whether from kick or not; while the patient was down the guard raised his foot and stamped him twice to my knowledge; the guard then raised him up, and says to him, will you go? don't know what patient said; seemed to be wild; so guard pushed him right on before him the way he wanted him to go.

Q. Who was superintendent of the Insane Asylum at that time?

A. Dr. Mathewson.

Q. Was the patient bloody or bleeding that you saw?

A. Did not see any blood.

Q. At which wing did this occur?

A. North wing; don't know attendant's name.

Q. Do you know the patient's name?

A. No, I do not.

Q. How long were you there?

A. From 13th of June to 15th of September.

Q. Did you ever see any other abuse of patients?

A. I can't really say I have; I knew Dr. Mathewson, also Dr. Hay; neither Dr. Mathewson or Dr. Hay were in sight at that time.

Q. Did you mention this case to any of the officers of the Asylum or employes?

A. No, sir; did not; talked to the hands on the building—I thought it was abuse, he being insane, but did not consider it my business; I was there simply to make mortar.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Did you ever inform any of the state board having control of the Asylum of this occurrance?

A. I did not.

MAJOR MOORE.

TESTIMONY OF THOMAS CARNAHAN.

Q. State your name, age, place of residence, and occupation?

A. Thomas Carnahan; aged 33 years; reside in Lincoln; occupation, fireman at post office.

Q. State speciffically and in detail what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. I worked for More & Krone five or six years; they were contractors for the south wing. Sometime during the last part of July, 1878, or 1879, there was a woman in Asylum who said she was sent from Omaha, and she said she was not crazy, and that the Dr. Mathewson mistreated her all the time, and she was standing at a window in third story (I think) on the east side of the building. She was telling us how she got her leg broke in Omaha. While she was talking, the Dr. Mathewson came up; she said, I must be going; the Dr. don't allow me to talk to anybody; and just as she said that, the Dr. came up and caught her by the shoulder and pulled her; she hung on to the grates, and he put his hand on her throat, and I guess he choked her; he pushed her back into the room, away from the window. I heard the Dr. say something, but could not tell what it was.

By Senator Schoeheit:

Q. What was the manner in which he took hold of the patient, was it rude or mild?

A. It was pretty rough; he came right up and commenced pulling on her arm. She held on to the grate and he took her by the throat.

Q. Did you see Dr. Mathewson at the time, and did he appear to be excited and angry?

A. I seen the Dr. at the time; I should think he was angry from the way he jerked her at the window.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Do you know this patient's name?

A. No, sir.

Q. You say I came and took her by the arm?

A. Yes, sir; by the shoulder, like.

Q. Did I take the patient by the throat, or put my arm around her neck?

A. You took her by the throat.

Q. Did you see any of the attendants there at that time?

A. No, sir; did not see one.

Q. Do you know there were more than three there in sight?

A. Don't know whether there was or not; did not see any of them there at that time.

Q. Do you know anything of a patient getting out of the hole at the end of the building where men were at work, and going away?

A. Don't recollect of anything of that kind; was not there all the time.

Q. You did not hear of some colored men taking out bricks, and assisting a patient to escape, did you?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. Did you hear of colored men or any one else making a hole in the wall for the purpose of allowing a patient to escape?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. Did this patient offer you money to help her get out of the building?

A. All the money she offered or said she would give was that she would pay some one to bring a note to Priest, in Lincoln.

Q. Did she show you any money?

A. Don't think she did.

Q. Did she tell you she had money?

A. She said her brother had money; think it was her brother.

Q. Did she tell you if you helped her out you would be paid for it by her brother, or any one else?

A. She said I would be paid for it, or anyone who would help her out would be paid.

Q. Did you know that woman did get out?
A. No, sir.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Where were you standing when you saw Dr. Mathewson approach the patient?
A. I was sitting on the east side of the building near the south end.

Q. Were you on the ground?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How far from the building?
A. About ten or fifteen steps from the building.

Q. Did you ever report this case to the board of public lands and buildings?
A. No, sir; I did not know who they were.

By A. H. Connor:

Q. Did you or any other person within your knowledge, in any way, try to assist this or any other patient to escape from the Asylum?
A. No, sir.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Was this a large or small woman?
A. She was what I would call a large woman.

THOMAS CARNAHAN.

TESTIMONY OF JOHN ROBINSON.

Q. State your name, age, place of residence, and occupation.
A. John Robinson; age, 33; residence, Lincoln; occupation, laborer.

Q. State specifically and in detail what acts of cruelty or neg-

lect you are personally cognizant with at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. I was working on the north end of the Asylum, attending mason, about three years ago last fall. One day, while at work, heard a noise in the Asylum; I looked into the window; a patient and an attendant were scuffling; finally the attendant strnck the patient in the face with his fist, and then he had him down and he choked the patient severely. At this time another patient came up to the window crying, he had a note wrapped up in his hand and wanted me to take it, and said we did not know how badly they were treated there. The patient was badly hurt;. did not see any blood; the patient was dark in the face; attendant had patient down three or four minutes; hands on his throat choking him. The patient staggered a litte when he got up, and they took him in some place; don't know name of patient, or the attendant; he struck patient a lick or two while he was down; think he, the attendant, struck him, the patient, about twice before he got him down. I know of another act of cruelty; this was out doors; north side of building; about a week after the first occurrence. The guard brought the patients outside of building; one of the patients, a man who would weigh about 130 pounds, kept walking around in a circle; after while he seemed to act as though he wanted to go towards the barn. An attendant walked up to him and turned him around and said, what is the matter of you, and would push him back towards the other patients, and the patient would come back again in the direction of the barn. The guard caught hold of him again and struck him with his fist, and kicked him, and got the patient down; he then hammered him a while with his fists—the patient's nose was bleeding—the attendant pulled him up, and he could not go good; another attendant helped the first attendant take the patient in the Asylum. The first attendant kicked the patient after he was down; kicked him in the belly and sides. The patient would draw himself up; the attendant kicked him about four times—the patient said nothing—the patient looked awful sickly and weak; never saw this patient afterwards; don't

know his name; don't know attendant's name; know of no other act of cruelty.

Q. When you worked there did you know me, or Dr. Hay, or Mr. Taylor?

A. I knew Dr. Mathewson by sight; did not know Dr. Hay, or Mr. Taylor.

Q. Did you ever mention these circumstances you have mentioned to me?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. Did you see me anywhere about at the time of these occurrences?

A. No, sir; I did not.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Did you ever mention to the Board of Public Lands and Buildings, or any of its members, any of these circumstances?

A. No, sir; I did not know who these men were.

his
JOHN X ROBINSON.
mark.

TESTIMONY OF ANDREW NETTLES.

Q. State your name, age, residence, and occupation?

A. Andrew Nettles; age, 33 years; residence, Lincoln; occupation, laborer.

Q. State specifically and in detail what acts of cruelty or neglect you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. Last October I was carrying brick at the Asylum on north wing. The attendants had the patients out walking around, about 4 o'clock in the evening. One of the attendants caught hold of one of the patients, and commenced shoving him,

and snatched him around. The attendant raised up his arm and struck him three times in the side. The patient spoke to the guard and said, you hit me as though I was a damned dog. Then the attendant reached down and picked up a half of a brick and struck the patient right in the butt of the ear. The patient fell on his face. The attendant caught him by his feet, and headed him right over—at that time another attendant run up and said, don't hurt him any more. The first attendant reached down and caught the patient by his arms, and the other attendant caught him by his feet, and they carried him in the Asylum. I asked the first attendant if they were going to kill the patient, and he would not exchange any words with me. Then I ran back into the building, to get the boys to come out and see it—when I came back they were gone with him. This is all I know about it; saw nothing else.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. What do you mean when you say the attendant caught him by his feet and headed him right over?

A. I mean that the patient was laying on his face on the ground, and that the attendant reached down and caught him by his feet and lifted him up and turned him heels over head on his back.

Q. What was the condition of the patient while on the ground after receiving the lick with the half brick; was he quiet and lifeless, or was he kicking and trying to get up?

A. The patient never moved. I was within six feet of him.

Q. Did he seem lifeless and like a dead man?

A. He seemed like a man that was dead when they carried him in; did not seem to move at all.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Do you know the attendant who did this?

A. I don't know him by name; know him by sight; was a large, tall man.

Q. You say this was a tall man; did he have whiskers?

A. Yes, sir; did not have whiskers; did not notice about moustache.

Q. What kind of a man was it who helped to carry him in?
A. It was a low, chunky man, with black moustache.

Q. Do you know the patient?
A. No, sir; I did not know him. I know you; I do not know Dr. Hay; knew Taylor, the steward.

Q. Did you ever mention this circumstance to either of us?
A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. You thought that was an outrageous abuse, did you not?
A. I did.
Q. Why did you not tell me about it?
A. Because you were not anywhere present. I asked the man who goes round fixing the pipes, and that was the way they treat you all out here, and he said yes; and then I thought it was no business of mine if he said yes.

Q. Was the man who fixes the pipes a patient?
A. Yes, sir.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Did you ever inform any member of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings of this circumstance?
A. No, sir; I did not; did not know that it was my business; talked to white folks about it. That night when I came home there was a white man at my house, with a machine, and we got to talking about it. I told him it was done; he wanted me to get into his buggy and go up to town with him and report it. I said to him, if the white people can't see after their own nation, I don't care to see after it; I made no further talk about it after that.

Q. If the patient had been a colored man would you have reported it?
A. I told the boys if that had been a colored man I would have "tore his head to the fat." I said to Mr. Hughes, that is the way with the white men; for a little money they will allow a man to kill his nation.

Q. Do you consider you have done your duty as a citizen of the state, in failing to notify the authorities of this case?

A. I asked a white man about it, and he would not give me any satisfaction at all, and I did not go any further with it.

Q. Was the white man you asked, the man you found at your house when you got back there in the evening?

A. No, sir; it was Mr. Hughes and Mr. Bowman.

Q. Do I understand you to say that when you came home you found a white man at your house, who asked you to get into his buggy and go with him and notify the authorities about this case and that you refused to do so?

A. Yes, sir.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Are you interested in any way or manner in the removal of Dr. Mathewson from the control of the Insane Asylum; or are you in any way influenced by outside parties to so testify, as to secure his removal?

A. No, sir; I am not interested in his removal, and am in no way influenced by outside parties. I have never seen anything wrong with Dr. Mathewson since I have worked there.

his
ANDREW X NETTLES.
mark.

TESTIMONY OF BELT HAWKINS.

Q. State your name, age, residence, and occupation?

A. Belt Hawkins; aged 35; residence, Lincoln; occupation, brick layer.

Q. State specifically what acts of cruelty or neglect you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. I think it was in 1878, on the second floor of the Asylum, I saw a patient choked most severely.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. What was the patient doing, or what had he done that led to his being choked?

A. I cannot answer; I do not know.

Q. How near was you to the patient at the time of the choking you have sworn to?

A. About 25 or 30 feet, I think.

Q. Who choked the patient? Was he an attendant?

A. I think he was an attendant; don't know his name.

Q. Describe the patient as near as you can?

A. About a middle sized man, I think; about 35 or 40 years old; appeared to be delicate.

Q. Describe how the choking was done?

A. The patient was down on the floor, and the attendant was on top of him, choking him around the throat.

Q. Did the patient seem to be badly punished; was his face colored?

A. Yes, sir; he seemed to be badly punished; his face was colored.

Q. What became of the patient when the attendant quit choking him?

A. The attendant took him up, and led him off to the cell.

Q. Did you know the patient's name?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you, or do you now know the name of the attendant?

A. No, sir.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Do you know he was an attendant?

A. No, sir.

Q. What sort of looking man was he?

A. I did not notice him much.

Q. You knew me when you were out there, did you not, and Dr. Hay, and Mr. Taylor?

A. I knew Dr. Mathewson and Mr. Taylor, but did not know Dr. Hay.

Q. Is this the same case referred to by next to the last witness, Mr. Robinson?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you report this to me or any of the officers?

A. No, sir.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Did the person who done the choking you have testified to, seem to be one in authority at the Asylum and with the patients?

A. Yes, sir.

TESTIMONY OF O. T. ALDRICH.

Q. State your name, age, residence, and occupation.

A. O. T. Aldrich; 39; Lincoln; carpenter.

Q. State specifically what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred?

A. During last month, about the middle, I was working between the old and new wings, near the third ward on north wing. My attention was attracted by a noise there, and I thought would look and see what was. While looking, the first I heard, saw a man, stranger to me, and he walked up to a patient and said, what did you do that for; don't you know any better than that? (Next appearance of what he had done). Under the seat was appearance of water, but did not see what was done; did not see anything farther. He don't know who it was but seemed to have charge of the people, and said, don't you know any better, and then struck the patient, got him down, slapped him, and he sprawled out on the floor, and kicked him; think he kicked him after he was down, but could not be positive; think he got

up again; pushed him about the length of the hall, about 35 or 40 feet, when I lost sight of him.

Q. State appearance of patient as to vigor and health?

A. The patient was to appearance in poor health; made no resistance; do not know name of patient, or guard, or attendant.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Did you learn the name of the guard afterwards?

A. No; I knew it was some one who had the right of governing.

Q. Did you inform Dr. Mathewson about it?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you take any steps to bring this to the notice of Dr. Mathewson?

A. No.

Q. Can you fix the time of this?

A. I think it was about the middle of January.

By Dr. Matthewson

Q. You saw me frequently, did you not?

A. Yes.

Q. You did not see me in the hall at the time?

A. No, sir; I was not looking out for you.

Q. Why did you not inform me?

A. I had my work to do and knew nothing about your prison.

Q. Can you describe the man, and do you think he was six feet tall, or less?

A. I do not know?

Q. Did he have smooth face or whiskers?

A. Could not tell.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. For whom are you working?

A. Mr. Van Alstyne.

Q. You state your attention was attracted by a noise; what was it, a voice?

A. Yes.

Q. How could you see him?

A. Through the partition.

Q. Was there a hole there, and how large?

A. Yes; about the size of your finger.

Q. Did you ever inform any member of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings?

A. No.

Q. How long did you work there?

A. Since the middle of November till the present time.

Q. That was all t e abuse you saw, was it?

A. Yes, that was all I saw.

Q. Do you recognize that piece of board, (holding up a piece of board).

A. I do not recognize it in this shape, but I recognize a part of it.

Q. Did you ever see anything through that hole?

A. No, sir; I dont know but I have seen something through that hole.

By Judge, Mason;

Q. Your means of judging whether this person was an attendant there, was by the way he used his authority?

A. That was the only means I had.

By A. H. Connor:

Q. Did any one else seem to be exercising authority there than the person who slapped and kicked the patient.

A. I did not see any one.

O. T. ALDRICH.

Testimony of C. F. Dille.

State your name, age, residence, and occupation.

A. C. F. Dille, thirty-five, Lincoln, stone-mason.

State in detail what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of occurring at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty or neglect occurred.

Question by Dr. Mathewson.

I was the foreman for Keys & Bullock as a stone-mason The only knowledge I have of cruelty or abuse by attendants was, as the patients came out for exercise, one of them stopped at a pail of water; he stepped four or five steps out of line that he was marching in, to get to the pail; just as he was in the act of taking up the cup to get a drink, two of the attendants came to him and rushed upon him together; he made some resistance to the guards got a drink when the attendants took hold of him, and one of them grabbed him by the throat and choked him and jerked him partially down on his knees and kicked him and jerked him up on his feet again, and rushed up him off to the grounds of exercise. This was not far from the middle of August, 1882.

Q. Are you acquainted with the patient?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you, or did you, know the name of either of the guards?

A No, sir.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. How long have you worked at the asylum?

A. During the last year I worked there fifty days.

Q. Did that time include all the time that the helpers were there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Those helpers were both colored and white men?

A. They were all white men.

Q. How much time was you there two years ago, during the building of the other wings?

A. I hardly know; something like fifteen days.

Q. You saw nothing out of the way in treatment of the patients two years ago?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see me anywhere about during this time?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see Dr. Hay, or Mr. Taylor, the steward, during that circumstance?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did ycu mention it to any one connected with the hospital?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see me in the hall at the hospital a few days ago?

A. I did.

Q. Did I ask you at that time if you had ever seen anything out of the way in the treatment of patients?

A. He did.

Dr. Mathewson:

Q. What did you answer?

A. My answer was: Only one incident.

Q. Are you positive you answered me tha way?

A. I can't call to memory positive, but it seems to me it was that.

Q. Are you sure you did not tell me no?

A. At first I told you no; and upon a moment's thought this affair occurred to me, and you said this was not the one you thought of.

Q. Did you not say it was of no consequence?

A. I can't say as to that.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Did you ever inform any of the Board of P. L. and B. about this?
A. I did not.

Q. Why not?
A. Because I had talked with others, and they said it was of no avail.

Q. Did any one cite you to such a case?
A. I can't say that they did.

Q. Who was it told you that it was of no avail to tell the Board?
A. I can't give any names.

Q. Do you know the name of the man that told you.
A. I don't know.

Q. Do you know the two persons whom you have described as being atlendants, were attendants?
A. I do.

Q. How do you know?
A. I see them on the grounds every day, and talked with them.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Did they tell you they were attendants?
A. They did not.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Did these parties you saw slap and kick the patients, exercise authority over the patients?
A. I knew they were guards or attendants by the authority they exercised over the patients.

C. F. DILLE.

TESTIMONY OF A. P. HOLLENBECK.

State your name, age, residence, and occupation.
A. A P. Hollenbeck, forty-five, Lincoln, joiner.

State what acts of neglect or cruelty you are personally cognizant of, as having occurred at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and as near as you can, the time and place such acts of neglect or cruelty occurred.

A. The first that I saw was in one of the wards—was in the second or third ward, but not positive which one—sometime last summer, about August or September. What attracted my attention, I heard a woman crying, and I was only a few steps from the partition. I went to see what the racket was that caused the crying. There I saw an attendant striking a female patient, over the head with her hand—striking her at least a dozen times while I stood there, as near as I can remember, it occurred to me that was strong medicine for a lunatic. The woman's feet were lashed together, the hands were fastened together by some kind of a contrivance, the woman sitting on a bench, her hands and feet fastened together. I saw a strap over her arms, which I think lashed her to the seat.

By. A. H. Connor:

Q. State the physical appearance of the patient.
A. She was a poor, emaciated looking thing.

State if she seemed to be suffering from the effects of the blows.
A. She was holding her head down, as it was the only way she could move, and cried from the thumping she got.

Q. How far were you from the patient when your attention was attracted by the noise?
A. About 15 or 20 feet.

Q. State what, if anything, intervened between you and the patient?
A. A common board partition with large cracks in it, some of them large enough to stick your fingers through.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Did you know these persons whom you saw slapping the patient to be attendants?

A. That person I have seen there several times acting in the capacity of an attendant.

Q. Was this a male or female attendant?

A. She wore dresses with keys, and wears the usual uniform, and I supposed was a woman.

Q. Is this the only reason you have to suppose that this person who was slapping the patient, was an attendant?

A. By her showing her authority and doing the usual work there, I supposed she was an attendant, and guess there is no mistake about. What I mean about the uniform is the apron.

Q. Can you describe that lady attendant?

A. She was quite a tall, dark complexioned lady, and good sized woman.

Q. How old a person would you take her to be?

A. In the neighberhood of 20.

Q. Describe her hair?

A. Darkish hair, done up in some form.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Did the patient seem to be reft of all reason, was she very insane?

A. I couldn't say as to that, I had no way of finding out.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Have you seen that person who you think was the attendant about the hospital lately.

A. I have not seen her there lately, as I have paid no attention to it.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. You may now narrate any other occurrance occurring at the Asylum.

A. The next thing I saw was in the third ward in the men's department about three or four weeks ago, I happened to be standing by the partition looking through, and saw Mr. Burns walking toward the south end of hall, and ahead of him, at the time I saw him start, were two men walking one behind the other, in a few steps Mr. Burns caught up with them, the two cranks, the first one he came to he grabbed him by the clothes about the body and lifted him clear from the floor and threw him at least three feet, and I think four feet, into a seat, he then passed to the next man and served him in the same manner, then the patient, the last man spoke one or two words as he struck the seat. Whatever caused Mr. Burns to grab the man, whether it was the words he said I couldn't tell, and struck him several times in the breast as hard as he could strike him, which caused the man to holler, and that aggravated Mr. Burns to that extent that he grabbed him by the throat and commenced to pound him again, and while he was doing this I called another man, one of the masons, to come and see it, when he came I stepped away from the place I was looking to, and he saw the same kind of treatment of the patient. How many times he struck him after I left the hole I don't know; the other man said he staid there till the fellow quit. The man who was struck looked as if he was going to the grave, being a round-shouldered, poor looking piece of humanity, appearing to be in ill health.

Q. State if, when you saw the patients first, they were acting violently or walking along quietly?

A. They were walking leisurely with their arms hanging down, seeming to be walking to the south end of hall.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Can you give the date or near the date of this occurrence?

A. About a month ago.

Q. You was boarding there in the house at the time was you not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You got your mail there at the hospital did you not?

A. Some of it.

Q. You come into the office and sit down and read the paper sometimes?

A. I came in and read your paper.

Q. You got your three meals a day there at the hospital did you not?

A. I always got them when I went after them.

Q. You saw me several times a day did you not?

A. I saw you several times a day sometimes, and again would not see you for several days.

Q. You saw Dr. Hay several times a day?

A. About the same as I saw you, sometimes several times a day and again would not see you for several days.

Q. Did you know that upon no occasion did both of us leave the house?

A. I knew nothing about it.

Q. You saw Mr. Taylor several times a day?

A. About every day when he was not away.

Q. Was there ever a day passed when you did not see one of us three?

A. Well, I don't remember.

Q. Did you ever mention this circumstance to either one of us?

A. No, sir, I did not, I supposed you run the concern to suit yourself, and it was none of my business.

Q. You didn't see either me, Dr. Hay, or Mr. Taylor about the ward at the time of this occurrence?

A. No, sir, I saw no attendant at this time about the ward except Mr. Burns.

Q. Didn't you absolutly refuse to tell me anything about this circumstance or any other when I asked you about it?

A. I didn't tell him who the men were that were doing it, but told him it was being done, and told him how he could find out if he would like to find out.

Q. You absolutely refused to tell me any thing about it when I asked you?

A. He asked me and I told him that these things were going on, but gave him no names.

Q. Did I not say to you, Mr. Hollenbeck, that I understand you have seen abuses going on by the attendants of the patients?

A. I believe you did say so.

Q. Had you not made such reports to other persons at that time?

A. Yes, sir, I had.

Q. Did I not say to you at that time, why not tell me?

A. I think you said you were the man that ought to know about it.

Q. Didn't I tell you that I was the very man that wanted to know?

A. I told you at that time that it was generally understood that you did know it or words to that effect.

Q. Didn't I tell you I was responsible for the conduct of my employes and care of the patients?

A. I don't know but you did, but I don't remember that language.

Q. Was not the language equivalent to that, if not the same words?

A. Well, I couldn't say; I didn't pay much attention to it, but presume if you say so, that you did.

Q. Did I not earnestly solicit you to give me any information leading to any knowledge regarding the abuse of patients?

A. Well, I told him if he had peep-holes on the ward doors, the same as we used at the other end, he could see for himself.

Q. Did I not say to you, Mr. Hollenbeck, that if you would let me know of any abuse by any person employed by me toward a patient, and I didn't set matters right immediately, that you were welcome to take any course you saw fit?

A. No, sir; you didn't say so.

Q. Did I solicit any information in language equivalent to that?

A. Not equivalent to the last part of the question; he said I "would see how quick I would set matters to right," conveying the idea that if he knew about abuses, he would set matters to right.

Q. Didn't I try to find through you who these parties?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did I find out?

A. No, sir; not that I know of.

Q. Didn't you absolutely refuse to tell me?

A. I did, and told you I was not at liberty to tell you.

Q. What possible conditions could there be that you couldn't tell me?

A. I had given my word not to.

Q. To whom had you given your word not to tell me?

A. I had been talking to Mr. S. S. Royce, he was one of them.

Q. Who was the other?

A. Mr. Peter Nelson.

Q. Who is S. S. Royce?

A. Is the engineer at the postoffice.

Q. Who is this Peter Nelson?

A. That is the man who is working at the barn at the Asylum, with a good big heart in him—an honest man, I believe.

Q. Is there any others?

A. Only us three—Mr. Royce, Mr. Nelson, and myself. I asked Mr. Nelson to go with me and talk it over; we went to the basement in the P. O.

Q. Was there anybody there but you three?

A. No, sir, I believe not; and Mr. Royce wouldn't have been there only he had a convenient place for us to talk in.

Q. What time did you talk this matter over?

A. It was between the hours of ten and twelve, when he was off from duty on Sunday.

Q. What Sunday?
A. I don't remember; it may be a month or more.

Q. What did you talk over?
A. The abuses of the Asylum and how we would get at it.

Q. Did you ever talk over there more than once?
A. I think I only met Mr. Nelson there twice.

Q. Did you go with him both times?
A. The first time I did; the next time I think I met him on the street.

Q. You talked over these same circumstances which you refused to tell me?
A. I presume we did, and the reason Mr. Nelson did not tell you before was, he was afraid he would be discharged by you, and didn't dare tell you.

Q. Was that the reason you was afraid to tell me?
A. No, sir; I didn't propose to get at it that way.

Q. Finally, at the close of our conversation, did you not tell me that you were going over town in a day or two, and if my fellows over there will let me, I will tell you when I come back who those persons were that you saw abusing patients?
A. I told you I was going up town in a day or two, and if my friends were willing, I would tell you all about, or something to that effect, and thought better of it afterward.

Q. Were they willing you should tell me?
A. No.

Q. What reasons did they give for not telling?
A. Because they had got the ball rolling.

Q. What ball?
A. An imaginary ball.

Q. Had you ever had any reason to suppose that if you gave me any information regarding the abuse of patients, that I should disregard it?

A. Yes, I have.

Q. What reasons?

A. Because I have heard men say you did it, yourself.

Q. Who was it?

A. I paid no attention to it, as it was common report.

Q. What purpose had you in concealing the fact that you knew of the abuse of patients?

A. Because I didn't suppose it would do any good.

By Judge Mason:

Q. What was your motive for refusing to disclose to Dr. Mathewson the abuses of which you had seen at the Asylum, and of which you had testified?

A. Because I didn't suppose it would do any good, and didn't want him to get ahead of us.

Q. When you say "want to get ahead of you," what do you mean?

A. Circumvent our intentions.

Q. What intentions?

A. Our intentions was to show the abuses of that place to the world, if we could get honest men to help us.

Q. Your desire was to see all abuses corrected, remedied?

A. Yes, sir; that is right.

Q. And you thought a legislative investigation would be more effective to accomplish this end than to disclose the facts to Dr. Mathewson?

A. That was the only redress we supposed we had.

Q. The real reason for the concealment of the facts from Dr. Mathewson was that there might be legislative investigation?

A. We thought that was the only effective way.

Q. This plan was considered and talked over by you—Royce, Nelson, Druse, and Eaton—was it not?

A. I don't know that Mr. Eaton had anything to do with; Mr. Eaton dropped into the case afterwards, and was not in the original plan.

By W. Eaton:

Q. Did I ever ask or advise you, as intimated by Judge Mason, to enter into any legislative investigation as regards Dr. Mathewson's actions?

A. No, sir.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. State if you know of any other act of cruelty occurring at the Nebraska Insane Asylum?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Detail the same?

A. I saw Mr. Merrill, an attendant, walking from the south toward the north end of the hall; he came up to where there was three men standing, and said something I could not understand his words were—just about the time he got his words out of his mouth, he grabbed an old gray-headed man, stranger there, and threw him into a seat; the men said something I could not understand. Merrill then dropped into the seat and grabbed the man by the throat, and commenced pounding the man in the breast, as soon as he got hold of him, striking in the breast, and after striking him several times, he got up and took the man and put him into one of the wards or cells, pretty sudden, and shut the door, the man inside, and Merrill staying on the outside. After Merrill shut the door the man hollered, and presume it was some sass or other. Merrill turned and went into the cell; then both were out of my sight, and what he done to him I don't know, but the man hollered like blazes, and after quieting the man, Merrill came out and went off. This was about supper time, and thought I would see if this man went to his supper, and when the bell rang, the men all went into the dining room where they take their meals, and I didn't see that man come out of his rooms, and I got tired and went off, and no one went there to look after him.

Q. Did the attendant strike patient with his fist or open hand?

A. With fist. The man was an old appearing, sickly looking man; was perhaps about 5½ feet high.

Q. Upon what part of the body did the guard strike the patient?

A. On the breast.

Q. Did you know the guard?

A. Yes, sir; Merrill.

Q. Did you know the patient?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know a patient there they call Dennis Plunkett?

A. I never heard the name before.

Q. About what time did this happen?

A. I think I have the date in a book, but since the affair of Burns and prior to my talking with you about the affair.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Did you tell Mr. Oiler, the engineer, that he had better not place too much trust in me, if he wanted to retain his place for it was quite probable he might lose by it; that there was something going on, and that I had meddled with your business and that you was going to get your revenge.

A. No, sir; I didn't tell him so.

Q. Did you till him anything like it?

A. I told Mr. Oiler if Mr. Mathewson didn't mind his business and let me alone, I would go for him.

Q. Did you tell Mr. Hildebrand, the cook, that I had meddled with your business, and that you would have your revenge, and to add revenge is sweet, and I'm going to have it, God damn him.

A. In the first place I never told Mr. Hildebrand any such thing, and in the second place I don't use profane language.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Have you any personal interest in the removal of Dr. Mathewson from the Insane Asylum?

A. None other than to get a humane being in his place, from the way I look it.

Q. Have you in any way or manner conspired with others to remove Dr. Mathewson, for personal reasons, from the management of the Insane Asylum?

A. No, sir; not in the least.

Q. Has any person or persons solicited you to testify against Dr. Mathewson?

A. None other than Mr. Nelson, as we have talked about.

Q. Did you go out to Con Keller's place last Sunday and say to Mr. Keller, if you will come up to the investigation and give your testimony for us, if I can ever throw a dollar in your way, I will do so, or words to that effect?

A. No, sir; I never did.

Q. Did not Mr. Keller say, if I go before the committee and tell the truth, it will be in Dr. Mathewson's favor?

A. No, he didn't say anything of that kind, because he can't say it.

Testimony of Edwin Nelson.

Q. State your name, age, residence, occupation?

A. Edwin Nelson; 14; at the Asylum, in Lincoln.

Q. State if you know personally of any acts of cruelty exercised toward the patients of the Nebraska Insane Asylum, by the superintendent or employes thereof?

A. I saw Mr. Searles, a patient there; he was running away, and some attendants overtook him. One of the attendants, I think his name was Johnson—I think he left here afterward—he caught him first, the patient picked up a lump of dirt, with which he was going to defend himself, but the attendant got it away from him; he started back with the patient, getting back about four rods toward the Asylum, where two other attendants came up there, the two guards who came up, they knocked him down and commenced kicking him; one of them put a handkerchief around the patient's throat, and drawed up on it to shut

off his wind; they held him there till he got black in the face, and they let him up again, then about the time he recovered from the first choking, they put the handkerchief around his throat again and commenced choking him again—then they choked him till he was black in the face and his lips began to swell, and I thought he was pretty near dead—then Mr. Lennon told them they had better let him alone or they would kill him. The guards kicked him considerable afterwards; they let him up and the froth was standing on his mouth; the guards had to help him nearly all the way home. The last I see of them was, they were washing the blood off of him; he had been hit on the cheek-bone. When they first downed the patient I was about a rod off; I rode up on a horse to where they were; I could see everything plainly. This was between the 10th and 13th day of October, 1882. The names of the other two attendants who came up, were Merrill and Christner; the name of the patient was Searles; do not know where he was from. I did not see any other acts of cruelty; the patient wanted them to let him alone, and said he would go back all right, but they put the handkerchief around his neck so he could not holler. Mr. Searles is still in the Asylum.

By Mr. Mathewson:

Q. What was you doing that you happened to be out there?
A. I was herding for the Asylum.

Q. Did you see any of the officers of the Asylum at that time?
A. No, sir.

Q. You live right in the house, did you not?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was I at home at that time?
A. I could not tell exactly, but think you was.

Q. Was Dr. Hay at home?
A. I don't know.

Q. Was Mr. Taylor there?
A. He was at the barn, when I drove the cows in, which was about an hour afterward.

Q. Did you tell him about it when you saw him?

A. I didn't tell him the particulars, but told him about the pounding the patient.

Q. Did you tell your father about it?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What's the reason you didn't tell Dr. Hay or I about it?

A. I did not think it was my duty.

Q. Didn't you think you was about as mean as the fellows who were committing the act by keeping it to yourself and not telling us?

A. Well, I didn't think it was any of my business, as I didn't know that anybody had told anything.

By A. G. Kendall:

Q. Which of the two attendants was it that first struck the patient?

A. I couldn't tell for certain, but think it was Mr. Merrill.

Q. Is Mr. Merrill an attendant at the Asylum now?

A. No, sir.

EDWIN NELSON.

TESTIMONY OF JAMES LENNON.

Q. State your name, age, residence, occupation?

A. James Lennon, 42; work at the Asylum.

Q. State if you know of any acts of neglect or cruelty occuring at the Nebraska Insane Asylum?

A. I don't know of any acts of neglect. I saw some of the transaction testified to by Edwin Nelson. I seen this patient running away after he got started, and run across a kind of a creek; they followed him, some men, I don't know who they were—a patient and two attendants followed him across the creek, as I thought. I took a pony and went around another way to cross a bridge to go over and see what was the matter,

and before I got there they had him catched over close to the railroad, and this patient who was after him, Johnson, the one that was running away, turned around and struck at Johnson. I don't the patient's name who was running away. Then the two attendants came up, they got into a scuffle, and I thought they both fell; there was no knock down in it, and they choked him with a handkerchief and kicked him a few times. By this time I got there, being on horseback, and told them to stop, but Merrill, I think, told me he knew his business; they choked him and kicked him a few times, and then I went on about my work. I didn't see no blood or cut on the patient, and am satisfied the superintendent nor any of the officers knew anything about it. I did not see them take him to the creek nor wash him; the Asylum was about one-half mile from where they caught the patient; they had stopped the patient before Christner arrived. It was my business last summer to work with the patients on the farm; Mullice came out to work with me (Mullice was a patient); I don't remember where he was cut, whether on the lip or some other part of the face; he came to work for a couple of hours, and Mr. Taylor came out and I sent him home with Mr. Taylor, telling him I thought he wasn't just right to work; received patient about eight o'clock in the morning; when he came to me he was cut in the face; I don't remember the place, but he was cut, and there was some blood on him. I did not make that cut; I don't know who made the cut, it was on when I got him; I received him outside of the Asylum from the attendant; I think this patient came from the 2d ward; I thought the cut was a fresh one; there was somo blood on his face, think it had stopped bleeding. The patient seemed to enjoy reasonable health, but complained of not feeling well that morning, but wouldn't tell who hurt him, but did not complain of the hurt on his face; think the patient was 26 or 27 years old.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Who do you get your orders for men from?

A. From Dr. Hay.

Q. You are never able to get any men from the wards without Dr. Hay's or my order?

A. No, sir.

Q. What were your instructions about using your men at work?

A. To treat them well, to work if they felt like it; if a patient complained of being unwell, it was all right, he didn't have to work.

Q. Who did you get those instructions from?

A. From Mr. Taylor.

Q. Mr. Taylor always directed you what to do?

A. Yes, sir; Mr. Taylor was my boss.

Q. Did I ever say anything to you about treating the men well?

A. Yes, sir, you always told me to treat them well.

Q. Did I speak to you frequently about the patients?

A. I don't know, Doctor, it was generally Mr. Taylor who talked to me frequently.

Q. Did you understand that you were to be watchful of the men, and see that nothing happened to them?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you tell me anything about the occurrence of this patient, Searles, at that time?

A. No, sir.

By Judge Mason:

Q. This treatment of this patient of which you have testified, did it strike you at the time as being cruel and unwarranted?

A. I thought the man who followed up had a right to strike, as the patient who run away struck first.

Q. Was that the reason at the time, you did not mention the matter to some officers of the Asylum at the time?

A. That wasn't the reason.

Q. What was the reason?

A. The reason is, I do not like to make enemies of the men who work alongside of me; if I report them to the Doctor, he will discharge them, and then I have enemies.

Q. This patient who was escaping, was he a large, powerful man?

A. Yes, sir, he was.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Who choked and kicked this patient—was it the two attendants who came up last, or was it the first attendant, or was it all three of the attendants?

A. It was the two attendants who did the striking and kicking.

By Judge Mason:

Did I understand you to say you saw no blood upon this escaping patient; and did I further understand you to say that you did not see the attendants stop at the creek and wash any blood off of the patient?

A. I didn't see them at the creek.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Did you cross the creek at the same place the patients and guards crossed on the way to the Asylum?

A. No, sir.

Q. How far from the place where they crossed did you cross the creek?

A. Pretty close on to one-half mile to go around by the bridge.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Did you see the guards cross the creek with the patient who was trying to escape?

A. Yes, sir.

By Conner:

Q. Was this person whom you supposed was a patient named Johnson?

A- I supposed the other patient was named Johnson.

Q. Do you know he was not an attendant?

A. I know he was not an attendant.

By Dr. Mathewson:

R. How long have you worked at the asylum?
A. Two years next August.

Q. Is this the only incident you know of?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You say if you had reported this to me I would have discharged the attendant. What reason have you to believe I would have discharged the attendant?

A. I received the idea that you would discharge the attendants for cruelty as it was the general understanding around there.

JAMES LENNON.

TESTIMONY OF FREDERICK HILDEBRAND.

Q. State your name, age, residence, and occupation.

A. Frederick Hildebrand, 39, Lincoln, cook at the Insane Asylum.

Q. State if you know of any acts of neglect or cruelty exercised towards the patients of the Nebraska Insane Asylum.

A. My business is such that if there was any thing going on I would'nt be able to find out anyway, one instance occurred in the kitchen last fall, sometime probably in November, between an attendant named Lewis and a patient, Detrick. Lewis requested Detrick to come into his meals. Detrick says just wait a few minutes. Then Lewis got him by the collar and then Detrick grabbed Lewis by the collar. I seen they was going to have a little trouble there, so I interfered. I saw that the patient, who was a powerful man, was getting a little the best of him, so I got the patient by the collar and run him in the ward, that was all. The attendant did not strike or choke him. The same patient, Detrick, at another time, about last Christmas, who was helping me around the kitchen where he is most of the time, Mr. Taylor, the Steward, came in here in morning, and this patient

ordered him out. When he said that, Mr. Taylor shoved Detrick back from the table a little, and Detrick threw Taylor down flat on the floor. I saw the position Taylor, who is a sickly man, was in, and I got Detrick by the collar and run him out doors. This is about all I know or have seen here.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. How long have you been at work at the Asylum?
A. About seven months.

Q. You are the chief cook are you?
A. Yes, sir. I arrange all the meals for the whole house.

Q. You see a great many patients ranging through the house and this is all the scrumages you have seen?
A. Yes, sir. This is all I have seen there. I have been chief cook at the Commercial for one and a half year.

Q. How do we live out there compared with the Commercial for board?
A. We don't have the variety that we do at the hotel, but what we do have is wholesome and plenty of it; vegetables first-class, meat first-class, bread is number one, better than at the hotel, every thing else is good, no trouble to get enough, never hear any complaint that we don't have enough. I get up a few more dishes a little extra out of the same material for the Doctor.

Q. What did I tell about cooking for the patients, the help, and the officers all together?
A. When the Doctor first hired me I was at the Commercial. He stated the foundation that institution was builded on was for the benefit of the patients, and I want these patients used right, and wanted good wholesome food for them; and further stated I want them to have the same as myself, and above everything else to be treated well, that the patients had to stay, and that if the help did'ent like it they could leave, and I carry out your instructions and give them good, wholesome food. Never heard you complain but what you had good food enough.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Will you state what Mr. Hollenbeck told you in regard to his purpose and what he would do?

A. The account I seen in the paper the other day was a little mistake. We were talking one day about different things in the building and telling about the doctor interfering about his affairs, and he, Hollenbeck, said it was about time to show it up and he would get even with him.

Q. Did he talk about it more than once and about what he would do?

A. I don't remember. It might and might not have been.

Q. Did he manifest any ill feeling toward the doctor?

A. Yes, in regard to his interfering with his affairs semeway.

Q. Did you ever hear him talking with the patients and tell them what he was doing for them?

A. Yes, he was in town one day and when he came back he said to Harris I have been away attending to you fellow's business.

Q. Hear him talking to any other patients?

A. No.

Q. Did he tell you anything further about that he was doing?

A. No, I believe not.

Q. Did he talk with you more than once?

A. He said they ought to have coffee and butter there, and I told him it was none of my business.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Do the patients have coffee or butter?

A. We give them, the patients, three times a week.

Q. Do you send Dr. Mathewson's table tea and coffee regularly?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who eats at Dr. Mathewson's table?

A. I don't know.

Q. Did Mr. Hollenbeck board there for a long while?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When he said he wanted tea and coffee there, was'ent he talking about himself?

A. I presume he was.

Q. Do you always have butter there?

A. Sometimes we do not, buying butter when we can.

Q. Did you get the impression from Hollenbeck that he was persecuting Dr. Mathewson?

I did'ent know any thing about it; none of the employees said anything about the victuals.

FREDRICK HILDEBRAND.

TESTIMONY OF PETER NELSON.

Q. State your name, age residence, occupation?

A. Peter Nelson, 40, the Asylum, farmer.

Q. State if you know of any acts of neglect or cruelty exercised toward the patients of the Nebraska Insane Asylum?

A. Yes, I saw this man Mullice, when he came out to work with Mr. Lennon, he was bleeding at the mouth and it had dropped down on his clothes, and perhaps a couple of hours after they had went out, Mr. Taylor came where I was sowing millet, I told him there was a man working with Mr. Lennon who had been hurt, he went over where they were at work, and soon returned with that patient, and remarked that both the attendants on that second ward were brutes, this was in the latter part of May, 1882. I judge of the time because I was sowing millett. The patient always has a sallow complexion, and he looked bad. I know nothing further about this affair, except that Mr. Taylor went with him to the Asylum. I first saw this patient about 8 A.M. Do not know whether the wound had ceased to run, when I saw him, about his breast, his clothes were covered in large blocthes with blood, and think there were some drops down. I saw the patient after he had been turned over to Mr. Lennon, about ¼ mile from the house. The patient made

no complaint, in my hearing, but Mr. Lennon used language to the effect that that was shameful. In the fall of 1882, while we were picking up potatoes, I returned a patient to an attendant at the hall door of the second ward, the attendant caught him by the neck and threw him down on the floor; the attendant tried to choke him, but the patient held his chin close down on his breast; when I stepped forward to where he had him down, he let loose of the patient—the attendant kicked him twice while he was in the act of getting up—the first kick he planted in his side; the patient made a kind of a half turn on all fours, and the last kick was in the rear. The patient gained his footing and ran away to the other end of the hall. The patient's name was Meyers, the attendants name, Christner. I left the building then. This was about 11:30 or 11:45 when we brought them into dinner. I had out between 25 and 30 men. In going up to the different wards, this patient had gone into the first ward, and when the patients were all in, this attendant Christner reported that one man was missing. I told him I was sure they had all gone into the door. I think Mr. Lennon was there and he said they had all gone in. Then I concluded the only place a patient could get away was to get in one of the other wards. I went into the first ward and found him there washing. I asked him what made him go in there and he said they had pushed him there when the patients were going up the steps; then I took him up to this second ward attendant; the rest I have told. I don't remember any words being said by the attendant of the second ward to the patient, and the patient had no time to say anything; the attendant punished this patient in my presence, and for the cause I have narrated. One day, about three months ago I should judge, a patient started to run away when they had them out in the yard. Mr. Christner caught him a few rods northeast of the north end of the Asylum, he stopped his course by pushing him around and starting him in the direction from whence he came—he continued to push him until he was about straight north from the center of the building, then he threw him down in a position so his head was away from me, his feet toward me, the patient was thrown on his back; this postion placed Christner between the patient's head and me, with

Christner's back toward me. From this position I couldn't see Christner's hands, evidently he was holding him down with his hands, at that time another attendant by the name of Gilbert, came upon the scene—he placed his foot somewhere in the front of Christner. I should judge upon the patients chest or throat, in the position of Christner's body hid from me, where Gilbert appeared to have his foot firmly placed, he raised his body from the ground and surged down upon the patient's body with his might, then they let him rise and the patient walked off alone. Did not know patient's name. I know of no other act of cruelty that come under my observation.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. How long have you been employed about the hospital.

A. One year and three months. This is all the cruel treatment I have observed. I did not relate these cases to you at the time. I had no instructions particularly to treat the patients kindly. When Mr. Taylor was in the mountains, I received instructions from you to get the patients to work by pushing or shoving them, but not to strike them, and said some would get along better by requesting them. I told you I had never ordered Mr. Huntly to do anything. You told me to treat them kindly and make their labor a pastime or something like that. Mr. Taylor had spoken to me before to the same effect. I will state here upon oath, that I considered this all smooth talk, for it was not in accordance with the way things went.

Q. Did you ever have any trouble with this patient Mullice.

A. For the safety of another patient I had to collar him once.

Q. What made it necessary.

A. We were packing ice. This patient, Mullice, threw a chunk of ice at another patient and threatened to break his neck, and I seized the patient Mullice by the collar and pushed him around up against the side of the house, and held him there awhile. I had another case when we were picking up potatoes. I was alone with about 25 or 30 patients at that place. Mr. Merrill was with me mostly, but was back with another patient who had walked in the other direction. I was going home with

this gang of men to dinner or supper, I don't know which, a stupid patient, by the name of Mathews, continued to remain in the rear. I stopped the gang of patients at the front gate and went back after Mathews, who was six or eight rods in the rear. I picked up a switch about the size of my little finger and switched him around the legs—think Mr. Merrill and Fred was further back in the field coming—stick was about 20 inches long, struck him three times.

By Mr. Schoenheit:

Q. Did you ever tell Dr. Mathewson anything about the treatment these patients received, which you have recited?

A. No, sir.

Q. When you had this conversation with Dr. Mathewson, did you know anything about the mistreatment of patients?

A. Yes, sir, I know of Taylor's bringing home a patient bleeding, and supposed Dr. Mathewson knew about it, so I said nothing about it.

Q. Do you know if Mr. Mathewson knew of this bad treatment?

A. No, I didn't know that Mr. Mathewson knew of it, but supposed he did, as I know Mr. Taylor knew of it.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. What reason had you to suppose that Mr. Taylor ever told me anything about that case?

A. I supposed Mr. Taylor told you about everything he considered was wrong.

Q. It was upon that supposition that you excused yourself from such information?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you not know I was in Cincinnati at that time?

A. Yes, sir.

Testimony of N. N. Manard.

State your name, age, residence, and occupation.

A. N. N. Manard; 34; Lincoln; stonecutter.

State if you have any knowledge of acts of neglect or cruelty occurring at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and if so, state what your knowledge is.

A. Four years ago this spring coming, I went to work down at the Asylum for Moore & Krone, contractors; we built the south wing without seeing anything; we came over on the north wing; built one story of that; after we got up on the second floor we saw this trouble; I heard quite a little racket before I went to the window, and I thought the noise was kind of queer; I jumped off the scaffold and run down and see; saw a patient down, and this patient was down, and when I come to the grates I saw this man kick the patient, and when he was getting up the man also hit the patient with his shut hand; when I saw this I was a little angry, and said if the grates wasn't between I would paralyze him; the description of the patient is out of my recollection, and so is the man.

Q. Did you know the patient's name?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you know the attendant's name?

A. No, sir, did not.

Q. How long did this attendant remain in the Asylum after this transaction you have described?

A. About a month, to my knowledge.

Q. Did you inform Dr. Mathewson, or any of the employes at the Asylum, of this transaction? if not, why did you not?

A. I did not want to have any trouble with anybody there while I was working there.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Can you give me the time, or approximate it as near as possible, that this transaction occurred?

A. It was some time in the last of August, three years ago?

Q. How much time did you spend at the Hospital, altogether at the building?

A. Four months and a half the first time, and about five this last time.

Q. What months were they the first time?

A. I went there about the first of June; when anybody was at work there I was there—the work ending about the last of October.

Q. Was you situated so you would be apt to see what was going on?

A. Yes, sir; I had the best chance, as I was on top of the building.

Q. During a great portion of the time while you were there were the windows open?

A. Yes, sir, we could look right in during the first year.

Q. What months of the year were you there the last year?

A. Commenced in July, 1882; finished work there the last of November.

Q. Had you the same opportunity of seeing what was going on there the last year that other men had?

A. Yes, sir; and a better chance from the outside.

Q. Is this case you have related all you saw?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know this man was an attendant?

A. Yes, sir; I know he was.

Q. Do you know whether there was more than one attendant on that ward at that time?

A. He was the only one I knew of; I saw him there a month afterward; don't know when he left.

Q. You knew me all the time you was there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you know Dr. Hay or Mr. Taylor?

A. I knew Mr. Taylor, but not Dr. Hay.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Did you ever see anything in the actions or conduct of Dr. Mathewson which led you to think he, Dr. Matthewson, would be displeased or offended to know or be informed of such conduct by attendants as you have testified this attendant perpetrated upon the patient?

A. Only just what I stated a few minutes ago, that Mr. Krone forbid me to meddle with Dr. Mathewson's business.

Q. The conduct of this attendant of which you have testified, impressed you at the time as being cruel and unwarranted, did it not?

A. It did.

Q. Why, then, did you not inform some officer of the Asylum, or some member of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings?

A. The reason why was I didn't want any trouble with anybody till I was brought into it.

Q. Who brought you into it?

A. Mr. Hollenbeck.

Q. When?

A. A week ago Wednesday coming.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. What did Mr. Hollenbeck say or do towards bringing you into this?

A. One day last summer we were talking together about these matters, and I dropped a few words which he recollected, brings me to what I have been doing now.

Q. State what, if anything, Mr. Hollenbeck said to you about testifying in this case.

A. We was remarking the patients being quieter on Thursday than any other day, and after he specifying that, I dropped them few words that I told you before.

Q. When did he ask you to testify?

A. A week ago to-morrow, I think, and he did not seem to be angry toward anybody.

By Judge Mason:

Q. You did not make any objections to telling what you knew, when he asked you, did you?

A. No, sir.

Q. If you had no objections to telling what you knew at Hollenbeck's request, why should you object or why should you not tell the officers of the Asylum, or some member of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings?

A. Because we was working together, didn't think of making any trouble and saying those words.

Q. Didn't you think as a humane man, when you saw this matter of which you have testified, that a stop ought to be put to it at once.

A. Yes, sir; that's the way I expressed myself.

Q. Didn't you feel it your duty to inform some one of authority?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Why didn't you inform some one?

A. Because Mr. Krone forbid me.

Q. That is the only reason?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Then it was not what Dr. Mathewson had said or done, or any other officer of the Asylum, that restrained you from telling what you saw?

A. No, sir.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Did you know that the Board of Public Lands and Buildings had any control over the management of the Asylum?

A. No, sir.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Is Mr. Krone living in the city?

A. Yes, sir.

NAPOLEON N. MANARD.

Testimony of O. M. Druse.

State your name, age, residence, and occupation.

A. O. M. Druse, thirty-six, Lincoln, publisher and dealer in live stock.

State if you have any personal knowledge of acts of neglect or cruelty occurring at the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and if so detail such knowledge.

A. I was passing up the south stairs to my room one day, on May 6th, 1879. Dr. Mathewson was there in charge of the asylum. I saw the door ajar in the second female ward and heard a scuffle therein. I stopped and looked in. Saw Dr. Mathewson have a woman by the throat, holding her up against the wall. Then on June 12th, 1879, I was passing the building about 5 P. M. Mr. Ryma, a patient called my attention to his face, which was badly swollen and black and blue; had the appearance of having been badly beaten. He begged me to do something for him; said Eastman had been pounding until he was nearly dead. I told the doctor what had happened, and his reply was, that he knew Ryma and Eastman had been having trouble; said that Ryma was a bad man. During the following half hour, Mr. Jenkins came in and asked the doctor if he had seen Ryma; the doctor said he had not. Mr. Jenkins said Ryma's face was badly swollen; Doctor said he had just up a wash to bathe it. Doctor kept on reading, but paid no attention to the patient. On May 12th, 1879, superintendent told Charlie Carter that when women refused to work in the laundry, to give them a shaking up. Carter said it always got into the house when he done anything to patients, and made a row with those in the house. Superintendent said it didn't make any difference what others said, so long as he didn't say anything.

State how long you were at the Asylum, and what position, if any, you held at that time.

A. I was at the Asylum about one and a-half years; held a commission as steward.

Q. What ward was this insane woman in, who Dr. Mathewson took by the throat?

A. In the second female ward.

Q. What was her name?
A. I couldn't tell you her name.

Q. Who was Eastman?
A. At that time he was an attendant on the third ward.

Q. Who is Charlie Carter you have mentioned.
A. At that time he had charge of the laundry.

Q. Have you detailed all the acts of cruelty that came under your notice?
A. Perhaps all that I could give dates or a very intelligent description of them.

By Judge Mason:

Q. How were you first appointed steward there?
A. The first knowledge was while I was in Utah. I received a letter from Gen. McBride notifying me I had been appointed.

Q. McBride was a member, at the time, of public lands and buildings, was he not?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. He is Your brother-in-law, is he not?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How came you to leave the asylum?
A. I was requested by Gov. Nance to resign.

Q. Did you resign?
A. I left at the time he stated he would like to have me.

Q. Did you say to John Cadman, during the time you was steward at the Asylum for the Insane, that either you or Dr. Mathewson had to quit, or words to that effect?
A. I don't remember of making the remark, yet I may have made it.

Q. Did you not say that both you and Dr. Mathewson could not stay there?
A. I presume very likely I made that remark. I don't remember it though.

Q. Did Gov. Nance assign any reason for requesting you to resign?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was that reason?

A. He said Dr. Mathewson was pressing matters, so that he would have to ask for my resignation.

Q. Have you not said, since you left the Asylum, that you would get Dr. Mathewson out of there, meaning the Asylum?

A. I presume I have made remarks of that character, for I always intended to if an opportunity presented itself.

Q. I notice you used a memoranda from which you testified in chief. When were the entries made in that memoranda.

A. At the time of the transactions.

Q. You used that memoranda to refresh your recollections, did you?

A. Yes, sir; as to dates.

Q. The facts which you have narrated in chief, are entered in that memoranda, are they not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In your evidence you have recited the facts therein entered, have you not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you now let me look at the memoranda from which you have testified?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you ever presented, made, or filed a complaint with the Board of Public Lands and Buildings, of the matters of which you have sworn?

A. I have never filed any complaint with them as a board; I have told individual members of the board of existing cruelties to patients.

Q. Who and when?

A. Talked with Mr. Bartlett, Mr. Dilworth, Mr. Davis, and Mr. Alexander. I can't give exact dates, but during their time, in 1879.

Q. Did you lay the same complaints in respect to which you have testified, before the last legislature?

A. I did in this way: The charges were preferred and handed to Mr. Wells, of Saline county, senator at that time, who agreed to present them to the legislature, but failed to do so. I can't say those acts were detailed in the charges; I may have detailed those same acts, and I may not.

Q. You preferred charges at that time?

A. Yes, sir; two years ago.

Q. Do you whether the Board of Public Lands and Buildings investigated these charges in relation to which you have just sworn in chief?

A. I do not.

Q. Do you know what made Dr. Mathewson take this woman in second ward, on May 6th, by the throat?

A. I do not.

Q. Who was present at that time in the ward?

A. There were several patients; no one else that I know of.

Q. Do you know the attendant in that ward at that time?

A. I presume I did.

Q. Was not Mrs. Brink the attendant on that ward at that time?

A. I couldn't say positively.

Q. Don't you know that Mrs. Brink was present at that time?

A. I do not know.

Q. Do you swear she was not?

A. I do not.

Q. The patient's name you say you don't know?

A. I do not know the patient's name.

Q. Do you not know the patient's name was Miss Ella Beerse, from Omaha?

A. I do not; I had very little acquaintance with the patients.

Q. Don't you know at that time a patient took the attendant's keys away from her, and drove her out of the ward?

A. I do not.

Q. What time in the day was this?
A. It was either while I was going up to dinner or supper.

Q. Where did you take your dinner that day?
A. At the officers' dining-room.

Q. Do you not know that while you and Dr. Mathewson were at dinner that day, that an outcry was heard in the second ward, and Dr. Matthewson went up to see what was the matter and found that Ella Beerse, the patient, had taken the keys from the attendant of the ward, and Dr. Mathewson went in to get the keys, and the struggle between him and the patient, was for him to get the keys?
A. No, sir; I don't know of any such circumstance.

Q. Do you mean to say there was no such circumstance?
A. I know of no such circumstance; but couldn't say.

Q. How many women employes worked in the laundry at that time?
A. I think there were three at that time besides the patients.

Q. Do you know whether Dr. Mathewson and Mr. Carter were speaking of the employes or the patients, on May 12th, of which you testified?
A. Yes, sir; they were speaking of the patients.

Q. Where is Carter now?
A. I couldn't say positive; the last I heard of him he was at the Asylum; he is a colored man.

Q. Did you keep a memoranda record of all that took place at the Asylum?
A. No, sir.

Q. Why did you note down these particular occurences and none others?
A. Because it was but a short time previous to this that I commenced to take memoranda notices of these things?

Q. How long is since you left the Asylum?
A. Along the first of July, 1879.

Q. All these occurrences you swore to occurred before July, 1879?
A. Yes, sir.
Q. What was the patient's name whose face was bruised?
A. Ryma.

Q. Where was he from?
A. I think from Omaha.

Q. Did you know the nature of his insanity?
A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know if he was at times dangerous and violent?
A. I never saw him in such condition; I had confidence enough in him to allow him to come in my room and repair sewing machines for my wife.

Q. Do you not know that this patient was an epileptic; that he came from North Platte; that when his fits came on he frequently fell down and bruised his head, and tore his clothes?
A. No, sir; I don't know that; never heard of anything of the kind.

Q. Do you not know that this patient, Ryma, at one time while you were there, in one of his epileptic fits, and while the spell was on him, broke down three doors in the Asylum, before the attendants could reach him, and cut and bruised himself severely, and if you did not personally see, did you not have knowledge of the fact?
A. No, sir; I never heard of such.

Q. Do you mean to swear that such was not the fact?
A. No, sir; I don't swear, but I never heard or saw such.

Q. Do you not know that this same patient at one time caught Dr. Mathewson in the third ward, without the slightest notice or provocation, and threw him violently upon the floor, and before the attendants could reach him, stamped him severely?
A. No. sir; I never saw nor heard of such a case.

Q. You swear you never knew, or heard, that this patient was an epileptic, and when his fits came on and he was a violent and dangerous man to patients and all who came within his reach?
A. I never knew or heard of any such thing.

Q. Do you mean to swear that such was not the fact?
A. I mean to swear that if it was, I was not aware of it.

Q. Did you know a patient there by the name of Wm. Judd?
A. I knew there was such a patient there.

Q. Was he a violent and dangerous man when he had his spells of insanity?
A. I never saw anything violent or dangerous about him.

Q. You mean the committee to understand that you do not know that this man, Wm. Judd, was a maniac, and raving and dangerous?
A. I do not know that he was a dangerous man.

Q. Your position was that of Steward—you did the buying for the Asylum?
A. A part of the time.

Q. Did you know the nature of the insanity of the patients?
A. No, sir; all I knew about Ryma was I heard some one say he had softening of the brain—my business was not in the wards, I had no keys to them.

Q. Do you not know and were you not cognizant of the circumstance of Dr. Mathewson going into the room of this man, Wm. Judd, to inform him that a friend had called to see him, and Judd, instantly knocking him down on the floor, and the attendants in the ward rushed to his rescue, picking him up, laying him on the bed, and it was some minutes before he came to?
A. I never heard of such an occurrence, sir.

Q. You still have the same feelings toward Dr. Mathewson which you have heretofore expressed?
A. Not very friendly to him or any other man who treated people the way he did the patients at the Insane Asylum.

Q. Did you not go to the committee, or member of it, or the clerks thereof, on appropriations, and induce them to cut down the appropriations for the support of the Insane Asylum, at the last session?
A. No, sir; I did not.

By A. H. Conner:

Q. Just what did the patient Ryma say to you had been done to him, and who did it?

A. He said Eastman had been pounding him, as before testified by me.

Q. What was your reason for saying you would get Dr. Mathewson out of the Asylum, if you ever did say so?

A. Because I considered him incompetent to manage the institution, and inhumane in his treatment of the patients.

O. M. DRUSE.

Testimony of Mary Sisson.

MONDAY NIGHT.

Q. State your name, age, residence, occupation.

A. Mary Sisson, 34, Bratton, Iowa and Mt. Pleasant, Iowa; was an attendant at the Insane Asylum for nearly five years.

Q. Were you ever in the Insane Asylum—in the Nebraska Insane Asylum?

A. For about five months; arrived there the last day of February, and left the 7th of August, 1882.

Q. State if you have any knowledge of any acts of cruelty or neglect at the Nebraska Insane Asylum.

A. When I was on the 2d ward, I thought the girls were treated roughly.

Q. What acts of cruelty, if any, did you see in the 3d ward exercised by any one?

A. I saw a patient struck with a leather belt.

Q. How long were you on the third ward?

A. Arrived there Tuesday afternoon, and was taken onto the ward next Monday afternoon.

Q. Did you see any acts of cruelty in the 2d ward?

A. Yes; I considered it an act of cruelty. One evening I called the Superintendent up; one of the patients run out toward him, and we tried to overtake the patient to put her back in her room. Dr. Mathewson said to leave her alone and he would attend to her; he put up his hand and caught her by the throat; I called it choking her; I don't know how long.

Q. How did the patient look—did she seem to be choked?

A. Yes, sir; I thought she did from her appearance.

Q. State the name of the patient?

A. Anna Erickson.

Q. State if you know anything about Dr. Mathewson visiting the rooms after night?

A. I know of his visiting three rooms. He was in the afternoon and had some trouble with one of his patients, and had some trouble with her and locked her in the room; at night the Doctor came in and went down the hall and opened the door, and then I heard the patient talking under the door, but I could not hear what was said, and he went into this lady's room that was talking at the door; he staid in there some time, but I could not hear the conversation.

Q. How do yon know Dr. Mathewson went into the room?

A. Dr. Mathewson told me so himself.

Q. Did you have any other means of knowing?

A. I heard the door lock and unlock; the Doctor told me afterwards, and said he heard an old lady groaning and went into this room to put her to bed; she, the woman, was in her night clothes. The next room was where a young girl was who had hysteria; she would take crying spells, almost screaming spells; there was another patient sleeping with her also in the front room. This patient said the Doctor choked her; she stopped her screaming as soon as the Doctor went into the room. The third room was where a young married woman was; he came to the window and asked if she had any night medicine; I told him she had; she was screaming and crying, and the Doctor went into her room; the lights were out in the hall, and he had no lights with him, at least I couldn't see any. As soon as he went into the room she said oh! and stopped crying.

Q. Did you see any marks of violence on any of these three women of which you testified?

A. One of them claimed the Doctor struck her on the head with a bunch of keys, and she had a lump on her head; another one had scratches on her face, made by the Doctor, but the Doctor told me he did not make them.

Q. Did the Doctor ask you or any other attendant to go with him?

A. He asked neither myself or partner to go with him, and we were the only two in the ward.

Q. Do you know anything about making the patients wash?

A. No, sir; I know nothing only from hearsay; three or four from my ward helped in the washing, and one helped with the ironing.

Q. How often would these women go to wash and iron?

A. Usually every day in the week, unless one of them complained of not feeling well.

Q. At what hour would they go out in the morning?

A. Right after the attendants had breakfast.

Q. What time would they return in the morning?

A. Just a few minutes before dinner.

Q. What time would they go out after dinner?

A. Right after the attendants had their dinner.

Q. What time would they return in the evening?

A. A little time before tea.

Q. While there, where did you eat?

A. In the patient's dining room. After the patient's table was cleared away, then our meals were sent up to us.

Q. Did the patients have as good food and as bountiful as the attendants had?

A. Our food was different, and a greater variety of it.

Q. Did the patients have butter on their table?

A. When I first went there, they had butter about once a week; I don't remember much about it now, as I tore up my journal.

Q. When Dr. Mathewson visited these rooms, how was he usually dressed?

A. I know once he was there without his coat or vest, his suspenders hanging. I would not say he was in the rooms this night, but he was in the rooms after the lights were out at night.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. How did the food compare in our hospital with the other hospitals?

A. About the same, Doctor, except in the better class of wards where they had a little extra.

Q. How did the attendants compare with other hospitals?

A. It was better then at Mt. Pleasant, but no better than at Independence.

Q. How did the amount of help compare with other hospitals?

A. They had more help and did not keep so many patients in the wards as you have.

Q. How did the general care of the patients compare with other patients—they were cared for about the same—their clothing was about as good?

A. At Independence, Dr. Reynolds used to go through every morning, and you did not visit every day.

Q. Did we ever fail to come when we were called?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did we always have a lady night watch?

A. No, sir.

Q. Was that the case—no lady night-watch when I came in the ward?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember the lady's name?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know it was my practice to go when I heard any noise about the house?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear those night-watches express the opinion that I was up about to see whether they were on duty or not?

A. I heard Miss Funk say that she supposed that was what you were about for.

Q. Did you hear the night-watch say that one night when she was asleep that I came and took her lantern, leaving her in the dark?

A. No, sir.

Q. Was it generally understood that I was pretty regular about the house?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you hear the help complain that they were not well treated?

A. Sometimes they thought you were pretty cross.

Q. Has it been the practice, where you have been, to have the lady patients go out to the wash house?

A. No, sir. Sometimes they would do the ironing and help about the sewing.

Q. On the whole, did'ent you think we had a pretty good managed hospital?

A. I don't think the patients were well treated.

Q. Was it more cleanly than other hospitals?

A. No, I think not.

By A. H. Connor:

Q. Why did you leave there?

A. We did not have any recreation and I thought I would leave.

Q. Did you think the patients were well treated?

A. If the stories I heard were true, they were not.

By Judge Mason:

Q. You stated you saw an attendant strike a patient with a leather belt in the third ward. Will you detail the circumstances under which the patient was struck?

A. The attendant had unstrapped the patient and was taking her down the hall and the patient did not get up, and she struck the patient. Of course the Doctor did not know that and I did not tell the Doctor.

Q. Those patients, whom you have mentioned, whose rooms the Doctor visited in the night, were making considerable noise were they not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. A great deal of noise?

A. Between a scream and a cry.

Q. You have had considerable experience with the insane, hav'ent you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. With your experience in other hospitals with patients, who are afflicted with hysteria and a class who seem to have an ungovernable temper, is it not a part of the most approved method in that class of cases, and is it not an improved method to call a halt in this outburst of temper—letting their temper run?

A. No, sir, it is the old method.

Q. In another class of patients that are insane who manifest their insanity by sulking, is not a part of the modern method to duck them in cold water to break up their sulking?

A. No, sir. I havs been in a hospital for fourteen years, and never knew it to be.

Q. What method is adopted with these sulky class by the superintendent to improve their condition?

A. Treat them kindly and do the best we could—not by violent measures or choking them.

Q. In the hysteria and screaming class, what methods have you known to stop that?

A. To remove them to back wards and keep them down till quieted.

Q. What particular thing or act came under your observation done or committed by Dr. Mathewson led you to conclude that he was cruel or unkind—his management of the insane?

A. I never saw anything or patient choked till I came here to to Nebraska. I did choke one once a little for pulling my hair at Independence. She had me down on the floor. Dr. Mathewson would put his hand over their mouths till they would keep quiet; that was all I saw, but heard a great deal.

Q. In your management of the insane, hav'ent you been taught to govern them by the same rules and laws as the sane, with an allowance for their aberration of reason?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In the government of a child whose temper was violent, would not the most effective method be effectual to place the hand over the mouth?

A. I should consider the child sane.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Are you the attendant that got the black eye there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How did it happen?

A. She was brought in in the night, and no one told us what kind of a patient she was. She seemed very quiet and peaceable, so I left her in the hall. She commenced using bad language and I shut her up, and then heard a noise and went in there to see what was the matter, and she rushed past me and in trying to stop received a black eye.

Q. What is the character of Anna Erickson?

A. Of embracing the gentlemen.

Q. Did you regard my holding one hand up and letting her neck into it, as choking?

A. It seemed so, Doctor.

Q. What, did you see the cruelty holding her off, or not letting her embrace me?

A. I don't know but you wanted her to. I suppose you did this for the purpose of keeping her off.

Q. What was the name of the attendant that struck the patient with a strap?

A. Mrs. Allen, an old attendant.

(Signed) MARY SISSON.

Testimony of E. Lawson.

Q. State your name, age, residence, occupation.
A. E. Lawson, 38, Lincoln, gas-fitter.

Q. State if you know of any acts of cruelty or neglect being exercised toward any of the inmates of the Nebraska Insane Asylum, and if so tell what you know.

A. I had a brother out there I thought was used pretty rough. I came there and found him with a big black eye and a big cut in the head over the eye, about two or three inches, and he had another scar or bruise like at the lower part of the ear. No other marks of violence that I know of; his face was badly swollen, and had no eyesight on one side. This was the last day of October, 1880. I came there and wanted to see him before I went to test the metre, and I saw Dr. Hay and I told him I wanted to see my brother, and he told me I couldn't see him, that it wasn't good for him to see me, and I told him I wanted to see him very much, and he said I could not see him, and I asked if I had to go and get an order to see him; then he said wait a while, and he started up stars, and in a little while he came down and had Dr. Mathewson with him. The doctor and I went in the office and Dr. Hay went to get my brother, so I understood, and he came into the office and Dr. Mathewson told me that my brother got into a rumpus with a patient there, but it didn't amount to anything, and I said I was sorry for that, and then we broke into another conversation, and it was 25 minutes to a half hour before Dr. Hay came down with my brother. When he came down I commenced talk my own language with him, and I asked him how that happened, if it was a patient or an attendant that done it—he said it was an attendant on the second ward, and also an attendant on the third ward, and the third man he didn't know. Then I turned and said to Dr. Mathewson how is this—he says it was the attendant and you say it was the patient, and then I believe the Doctor repeated the same words he had said before. I told my brother what Dr. Mathewson said, and he said it wasn't so. My brother complained of a terrible headache the last four days; and he died in October the next year. I saw him about two weeks afterward, and he couldn't speak to me, and never spoke to me after that. This was the last

conversation I had with my brother. My brother told me he was sitting in the last chair of the south end of the ward and he had a paper or a book, I forgot which that he was reading, and sometimes he was singing he said, and the attendant passed him saying something and came again saying something, but he didn't understand it, and the third time he came, said the same thing, at the same time slapped him over his mouth. Then he said he, my brother, went up and got hold of him and tried to floor him. Then he, the attendant, called for two more men, then threw him down on the floor and kicked his head with their boots. That's about all he said about it. He had a book and some personal property there, especially a book with memoranda, and also money and papers, passport which I have been trying to get, which I could not nor any of his clothing.

Q. Was the case of beating you saw there before or after the time you was there and saw your brother?

A. It was afterward. It was in the third female ward, they used a woman there pretty rough. They tied her to a chair and then hit her three or four raps with a strap or black snake; it was done by women; she screamed while they were whipping her; do not think they whipped her till she stopped.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. What means had you of seeing the treatment of patients in the third ward?

A. I was hanging some of the gas fixtures. I helped Ashton put up nearly all the gas fixtures in the building, and if I recollect right, Mr. Ashton was helping me this time. My brother came to this country in April, 1879, and to the Asylum in March, 1880. All I know about his being hurt there was what he told me. He was there about eighteen months. He had two overcoats and some small clothes, three or four coats altogether, and some money. I called for his effects twice since he died, and asked Dr. Hay if he would find that book, I would like it. I furnished him a pair of socks and a pair of drawers. He was there from Saunders county. I took him away to bury him. He was fully six feet tall, and weighed about 160 or 165 I should judge. I never heard what occurred there, but once you took him out to pull up some posts, and some of the men were afraid of him.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Did you or did you not, when your brother died, insist that the Insane Asylum furnish the coffin to bury your brother in?

A. No, sir, I bought the coffin and took him right off.

(Signed) E. LAWSON.

Testimony of John Walker.

Q. State your name, age, residence, occupation.

A. John Walker, 22, at the Asylum, an attendant at the Asylum.

Q. Do you know a patient at the Asylum by the name of J. C. Parks?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember about Mr. Parks getting hurt?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What physician attended him?

A. Dr. Hay.

Q. State if you saw the patient Parks after he was hurt?

A. I did.

Q. Where or upon what part of his body was he hurt?

A. About the ribs.

Q. What was the character of this hurt about the ribs? How was it done?

A. I don't know only what I am told.

Q. Did any one ever tell you that the ribs were broken?

A. Some one told me but, I can't say who.

Q. Did Dr. Hay tell you the ribs were broke?

A. It seems to me he did.

Q. Was the patient bandaged?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he complain to you?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Where did he say he was hurt and how?
A. His ribs and head.

Q. Did he say his ribs were broke?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. About what time was Mr. Parks injured?

A. Two or three days after he came, in the fall of 1882; he is in the basement ward.

Q. Do you personally know how these injuries were inflicted, or have you heard Dr. Hay say?

A. No, sir; but Christner and Gilbert said he was kicked by Patient Myers. Parks said it was done by two of the attendants on the upper wards; he didn't know who. Mr. Parks is able to be about now. He said he was in the yard, and one of the attendants told him to move inside; he didn't move as fast as they thought he should, and he told them that if they would give him time he would go in; that he was feeling unwell. One of them gave him a shove and throwed him on the ground and then jumped on to him and commenced kicking him.

Q. Do you know who carried Parks into the house?
A. He was not carried; he walked in.

Q. Do you know anything about Dr. Hay interfering while they were abusing the patient Parks?

A. No, sir; I saw them leading Mr. Parks into the building; Dr. Hay and Mr. Christner were leading him in.

Q. Were there any other persons about the building?

Yes, sir; patients and attendants. I saw them have the patient on the ground; I might have seen him five or ten minutes before he was on the ground. One of my patients, said he, Parks, had a fit, and I saw there was plenty of help there, so I let him go, as I was the only person in the other end of the ward.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. How long have you been there?
A. Four months and nine days; have had care of ward most of

the time. Was instructed four nights in succession by Dr. Mathewson to treat the patients kindly; to treat them as though they were a friend or a brother of mine. I was instructed on the 4th, 5th, 6th, and 7th of October, 1882, and was in Dr. Mathewson's office when I received the instructions. Was never in a hospital for the insane before.

Q. Have you always treated them as instructed?

A. I have had some trouble with patients; when I see them fighting, I try to part them; have been struck by patients, one striking me in my mouth and I struck back. As soon as I got them under my control I let them alone; the protection of myself made me get them under my control. I didn't hurt any of them striking them in the breast. Do not recollect the time this occurred; it was about seven or eight weeks ago. Mr. Parks is a Wyoming man. This accident was soon after he came here. I understood he had a rib broken before, while he was in Iowa.

Q. Did you understand my instructions was smooth talk, or were you to obey my instruction?

A. To obey them.

JOHN WALKER.

TESTIMONY OF MATILDA E. DAWSON.

State your name, age, residence, husband.

A. Matilda E. Dawson, forty-seven, Plattsmouth, Neb., Chas. S. Dawson, general storekeeper B. & M. R. R.

Q. Were you ever an inmate of the Nebraska Insane Asylum?

A. I was, sir.

Q. How long were you an inmate of the asylum?

A. About two weeks.

Q. About what time of the year were you an inmate?

A. In June, 1882.

Q. State what you saw there?

A. For two years Dr. Livingstone had been treating me for the nervous hysteria, of a very bad kind at times, and my daughter got married, and two or three months afterward, I asked Dr. Livingstone to take me to Lincoln Insane Asylum for my health. He took me there, telling me I should have great care, and a quiet place with quiet table, etc., to sit at. Mr. Dawson took me there, and instead of putting me in a quiet place, Dr. Mathewson took hold of my arm very rudely and roughly, and put me in the second ward amongst crazy maniacs. I said to Dr. Mathewson: "Not there, sir; not there." He still thrust me in amongst those women. The lady attendant soon saw the mistake and took me, locking me in my cell; she staid me all night nearly, on and off, probably against orders; but I don't know.

Q. What acts of cruelty or neglect?

A. Next morning I sent for medicine and said I was fainting, but was not noticed; sent for medicine by Dr. Mathewson, but he did not send it. I sat at my first meal next day at dinner, between two uncleanly crazy women; the uncleanliness was extreme, so much so that I could hardly stand the stench; the food was vile; you wouldn't give it to your pigs; there was a little potato, greens unstrained, the hardest of meat, that the patients never eat while I was there, but used to throw it away. The food was filthy; no butter on the table during the week I was in the second ward; no milk for my tea.

Q. Was this the general character of the food?

A. This was, during the week I was in the second ward for dinner.

Q. What was the food for breakfast and supper?

A. It was dry bread and hash in the morning; no butter. To show the dislike of the patients for the hash, some of them would throw the coffee into the hash and send it down that way. The patients complained of their food. The attendants were extremely kind to me. I did not see Dr. Mathewson for three days. Dr. Hay used to go through every morning.

Q. What other acts of cruelty or neglect did you see?

A. There was a woman, a homicide, was put into the next cell; the first night she was very quiet; the next morning the knives were

put on the table, and for dinner too; she was there, with the knives on the table; she showed no evidence of boistering until after dinner, when she gave one of the attendants a very black eye. I was frightened, and asked the attendant to lock me in, which she did. They called for help. I saw Dr. Mathewson right outside the window of the cell next but one to mine, shake a leather strap at a woman; do not know whether it was a strap, a whip, or leather thong; the the doctor was out-doors. This was while I was in the second ward.

Q. Did you ever see any other acts of cruelty or neglect on the part of Dr. Mathewson?

A. Not while in the second ward. After this, I went into the first ward, called the convalescent ward, on Sunday. The food in this ward was better, more cleanly, but of very small quantity.

Q. Was the food sufficient in quantity to properly nourish the patients?

A. No, sir; I lost fifteen pounds in two weeks; the butter was very scant, and we could get no milk for our tea.

Q. Did you witness any acts of cruelty?

A. There was a poor woman, Mrs. Coffton, very crazy, in the room next to me, who would walk up and down the floor, making it very uncomfortable for us. I complained to the attendants—to Miss Brink—of my rest being broken, and the cause of broken rest was not removed. This woman was very filthy, and but one attendant in the ward. There was one lady there very badly neglected; she had fits; was there and saw her in one of these fits and assisted her. Her head was bruised by falling on the floor, and her hands badly burned by falling on the heated coils, used for heating the building. I asked the attendant if that was the usual way she was treated, and the attendant said she had no time to watch or care for her. Mrs. Boyd was in this convalescent ward, while there. Dr. Mathewson would not let my daughter stay to where I was put to sleep, but Dr. Mathewson allowed Mrs. Boyd's sister to remain and see her. Dr. Mathewson read all my letters sent to my husband, and addressed them to him. No one was allowed to visit patients without the consent of Dr. Mathewson. My husband sent me $1.00 worth of stamped envelopes, which Dr. M. kept. Jennie Switzer ran away from the Asylum and came to my house.

By Dr. Matthewson:

Q. How long was you on the second ward?
A. About a week.

Q. How long on the first ward?
A. About a week and a few days.

Q. On the second ward you fared about as well as any of the patients?
A. I lived better because I didn't eat anything except bread.

Q. Did the attendants feed you any from their own table?
A. They did not except a cup of tea from their own table.

Q. Did you see Dr. Hay in the second ward frequently?
A. I think, every morning.

Q. Did you see me in that ward?
A. I saw you one afternoon, cutting patient's hair. This was on the second ward; on the first ward I fared just as well as any of them.

Q. Did you hear of any one complain of the food in the wards?
A. Yes; every one except Mrs. Boyd.

Q. Did you hear Mrs. Boyd complain of food?
A. Mrs. Boyd said she would be glad when she got home.

Q. Was Dr. Hay and attendants kind to you?
A. Yes, sir; very kind.

Q. Was I kind to you?
A. No, sir; very gruff, not speaking to me.

Q. Did you see me treat any of the patients unkindly?
A. No, sir; for I did not see you much at all.

Q. You say you lost 15 pounds of flesh while there?
A. My husband said so, and Dr. Livingstone was shocked to see me.

Q. Did you write something after you left which was published n the paper?
A. I did; thanking Dr. Hay and the attendants of the first and second ward for their kindness, and saving my life while there.

Q. Who were the parties that you wrote to take their friends away and that did take them away?

A. I wrote to the friends of a southern lady whose name I do not remember, and I called on the brother of Mrs. Styles at Plattsmouth.

[Signed] M. E. DAWSON.

Testimony of Dr. H. P. Mathewson.

Testimony of witnesses taken before the Senate Investigating Committee, to inquire into the conducting and management of the State Hospital for the Insane, taken Tuesday evening, February 13, 1883.

Dr. H. P. Matthewson, sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. You may state what official position you hold, and how long you have held the same?

A. I am Superintendent of the State Hospital for Insane, and have held that position for a little over five years.

Q. Will you state if rules and regulations for the guidance of the employes and those in charge have been established?

A. Yes, sir; they have.

Q. Have you those rules and regulations?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you produce one copy; they are printed, are they?

A. Yes, sir; (witness produces copy).

Mr. Mason: I will offer copy in evidence, marked "A."

BY-LAWS,

Organization and Meetings of Board of Trustees.

CHAPTER I.

Section 1. The Board of Trustees shall, at their annual meeting on the first Wednesday in December, elect one of their number President and another Secretary, who shall hold their offices until their successors are appointed and qualified. All elections shall be by ballot unless otherwise ordered.

Sec. 2. There shall be, in each year, four regular meetings of the Board, to be held on the first Wednesdays in December, March, June and September. Nevertheless, the President may, on the solicitation of one member of the Board, change the time from one to two weeks earlier or later, excepting the annual meeting. The President of the Board of Trustees shall call a special meeting whenever he deems it necessary, and shall state in the notice, as nearly as practicable, the business for which such meeting is called.

CHAPTER II.

Section 1. The President of the Board of Trustees shall preside at all meetings of the Board, and perform all such executive duties as the Trustees may, from time to time, direct; *Provided,* however, that the Board may elect a Vice-President who shall hold his office during the term of the President; preside in the absence of the President, and have the same power and authority in the absence of the President as he would have if present.

Sec. 2. The Secretary shall keep a full and true record of the proceedings of the Board, and sign all contracts made by them.

CHAPTER III.

Committees.

Section 1. There shall be a Standing Committee on Finance, consisting of two Trustees, to be appointed by the President at each an-

nual meeting of the Board; or, if otherwise directed, to be elected by ballot. At each quarterly or special meeting, any vacancy in the committee shall be filled by *pro tem.* appointments by the President.

It shall be the duty of the Finance Committee to examine all accounts and reports touching the receipt and expenditure of money, and examine into and report at least quarterly upon all other matters appropriate to such committee.

SEC. 2. There shall be a thorough visitation of the Hospital at the regular quarterly meetings by one or more of the Trustees. A record shall be made of each visit in a book kept for that purpose.

CHAPTER IV.

Finance.

SECTION 1. All money hereafter appropriated by the Legislature for building, furnishing, finishing, or for any other purpose other than the current expenses of the Hospital, shall be drawn by an order of the Board of Trustees, and approved by the Superintendent.

SEC. 2. The Superintendent shall collect all sums due the Hospital from private pay patients, for board or clothing furnished such patients, or due from other sources, and at each regular meeting of the Board shall make a report of the sums so received.

SEC. 3. At each regular meeting of the Board of Trustees, all disputed and discredited bills or accounts shall be referred to the Finance Committee, who shall report, in writing, upon the same as soon as practicable.

SEC. 4. All contracts for supplies, and all purchases for the Hospital, shall be made by the Superintendent, or by his direction.

SEC. 5. All business transactions of the Hospital, when money is to be disbursed, shall be in writing, either by written contract or passbook, properly minuted at the time of purchase.

SEC. 6. The Superintendent shall keep a full record of all money received and disbursed for the Hospital, to whom paid and for what purpose, and shall make a report of the same at the annual meeting in December of each year.

CHAPTER V.

Resident Officers of the Hospital.

SECTION 1. The resident officers of the Hospital shall consist of a Superintendent, Assistant Physician, Steward, and Matron, who shall reside in the Hospital, and devote themselves entirely to its interests and shall be subject to removal, excepting the Superintendent, at the pleasure of the Board of Trustees.

SEC. 2. None of the resident officers shall resign their office without first giving three months' notice of such intent to the Secretary of the Board of Trustees.

SEC. 3. The salaries of the resident officers shall be paid monthly.

CHAPTER VI.

Superintendent.

The Superintendent shall be the chief executive officer of the Institution. He shall appoint and exercise full control over all employes, attendants and assistants in its service. He shall prescribe their several duties, and see to their faithful performance. Under the direction of the Trustees he shall institute such police regulations as the good order of the Hospital may require. He shall be responsible to the Trustees for the care of the buildings, grounds, stock, furniture and fixtures appertaining thereto. He shall have entire supervision of the patients in their medical, moral and physical treatment. He shall visit them in their works as frequently as may be necessary to keep himself fully advised of their condition, and to note the progress of each case, and shall give such directions to the overseers and attendants as may be essential to meet the ends of their treatment.

SEC. 2. At each annual meeting of the Board of Trustees, the Superintendent shall make a full report of the condition of the Hospital and its transactions for the past year, with such observations and suggestions as he may deem important for the interest of the Institution, or of interest to the public generally, or to the medical profession; and at each meeting of the Board he shall give such information as he may deem of importance, or as the Trustees may request.

SEC. 3. For good cause, he may suspend any resident officer, but

shall immediately give notice thereof to the Board of Trustees. He may, at pleasure, discharge any of the employes, attendants, or assistants.

SEC. 4. He shall provide a Seal for the Hospital, with the proper device thereon, which shall be under his control, and used by him whenever the seal of the Hospital is required.

SEC. 5. He shall keep clear and exact accounts of all purchases and of sales of produce of the farm, and of all receipts and expenditures of money. He shall, when required, exhibit all his account books to the Finance Committee, and shall furnish an abstract of the same to the Board of Trustees when requested to do so.

SEC. 6. He shall keep the accounts of all employes, attendants and assistants of the Hospital, and settle with them monthly.

SEC. 7. He shall provide the necessary account books for his department, which shall always remain in the Hospital, and shall at all times be open to the inspection of the Trustees.

SEC. 8. The Superintendent shall purchase furniture, fuel, stoves, implements, stock, and all other necessary articles for the Hospital and farm, and shall be responsible for the safe keeping and economical use of the same.

SEC. 9 He shall oversee the business of the farm, garden, stock and out-buildings, and see that they are always kept in good order.

SEC. 10. He shall constantly observe the conduct of the persons employed in subordinate stations, and see that in all respects they perform their duty.

CHAPTER VII.

Assistamt Physician.

SECTION 1. The Assistant Physician shall prepare and superintend the administering of medicines. He shall visit the wards frequently, and carefully note the condition and progress of individual patients. He shall see that the directions of the Superintendent are faithfully carried out, and shall promptly report any cases of neglect or abuse that may come under his notice. He shall assist in devising employment and recreation for the patients, and endeavor in every way to promote their comfort and recovery. He shall keep such record of the cases as the Superintendent may direct, and assist him in

preparing statistics, conducting correspondence, and such other duties of his office as can be properly deputed.

SEC. 2. In the absence of the Superintendent, the Assistant Physician shall exercise the duties of his office, unless the Trustees shall otherwise determine.

CHAPTER VIII.

Steward.

SECTION 1. The Steward, under the direction of the Superintendent, and not otherwise, shall make all purchases for the Hospital, where they can be made on the best terms; keep the accounts, make arrangements with, pay and discharge those employed in and about the Hospital, and have a personal superintendence of the farm, garden and grounds, and perform such other duties as may be assigned him.

CHAPTER IX.

Matron.

SECTION 1. The Matron, under the direction of the Superintendent, and not otherwise, shall have the general supervision of the domestic arrangements of the Hospital, and do what she can to promote the *comfort and welfare of the patients.*

GENERAL RULES.

CHAPTER X.

SECTION 1. In making arrangements with individuals to be employed in any department of the "Nebraska Hospital for the Insane," it is to be distinctly understood that their whole time is to be devoted to the Institution; that the Hospital contracts for their whole time, *and that they are not to leave their duties, or the premises, without express permission* from the Superintendent, or, in his absence, from the Assistant Physician or Steward.

SEC. 2. They are expected to perform with alacrity and cheerfulness, and to the best of their abilities, *all duties* that may be assigned to them by the officers of the Hospital, and must expect an unceasing scrutiny of their manner of performing their duties; must receive suggestions and corrections kindly, and endeavor to profit by them, and at all times and under all circumstances endeavor te promote the welfare and happiness of the patients, and the prosperity of the Hospital.

SEC. 3. All persons employed in and about the Hospital are expected to treat the patients, every one having business at the Hospital, and *each other*, with respect and courtesy. They are to be neat in their habits, and as neat in their dress as the nature of their duties will permit, avoid wearing their hats in the house, going in their shirt sleeves in the wards, unless when specially at work, lounging on the settees, or reclining at all during the ordinary hours of work, and every act unbecoming their exalted vocation.

SEC. 4. No person employed in the Hospital shall buy of patients or sell to them anything whatever, or receive gratuities or presents from patients or their friends, except by permission of the Superintendent.

SEC. 5. When abroad, they are to avoid speaking of the deportment, conversation, peculiarities, or even the names of patients, and are never to speak disrespectfully of the Hospital or any of its officers.

SEC. 6. No male person (except officers) employed on the premises shall enter the small wards, or any portion of the building or grounds occupied by female patients, or that portion of the building occupied by female employes, without express permission.

SEC. 7. No person (friends and acquaintances of employes included) shall be admitted to the wards, kitchen, bakery, laundry, wash-room, engine-room, carpenter-shop, or other department of the Hospital where they are not employed, without permission or on necessary errand, or in accordance with such rules as may be established by the Superintendent, and they must not be absent from their posts longer than is absolutely necessary.

SEC. 8. It is necessary for their highest welfare, that patients should, as far as possible, have some kind of employment, either work of some kind, or reading, riding, driving, or amusements, and no proper opportunity is ever to be neglected to induce patients thus to

occupy themselves. But it is to be distinctly understood (and no infraction of this rule will be allowed) that patients shall be employed to *assist only*, and not to do the work that belongs to others to do, and for which they receive compensation.

SEC. 9. Cheerfulness is always desirable in the wards, *but marked levity*, and especially *boisterous conduct*, is very undesirable, and all should be careful to make this important distinction.

SEC. 10. It is desirable for many reasons, that patients should leave the Hospital with pleasant recollections of their residence and treatment in it, and every one who comes in contact with them can do something to promote this end. Patients who have recovered are generally quite competent to give an accurate account of what occured during their disordered state, of the treatment received from those who had the care of them, and much other information of importance to those in charge of Hospitals. It is hoped that in all cases their testimony will be such as to increase the standing and respect due to those employed for their care and restoration.

SEC. 11. When absent, the hour for return will be 10 o'clock. At that hour the doors will be locked and no person admitted afterwards without being reported to the Superintendent. It is wished to allow as much relaxation as possible to those who perform their arduous duties faithfully, and as much absence as is consistent with the peculiar service required and the welfare of the patients will permit; but whenever, as on public days, the absence of attendants and others is deemed likely to be prejudicial to the patients, they are expected to remain at their posts. Promptness in returning at the hour up to which leave of absence was granted, is especially enjoined upon all, and no excuse but the occurrence of unforseen and unavoidable circumstances, will be deemed satisfactory.

SEC. 12. All letters, or other writing, parcels or packages to or from patients, must be shown to the Superintendent without previous examination. Attendants and all others must never retain any writing of patients. All money found on patients, and all sums left or sent for their special benefit, are to be kept and disbursed by the Superintendent.

SEC. 13. All damage done by patients in the male wards to clothing, furniture, glass, or anything of value, must be promptly reported

to the Superintendent; and any like occurrence in the female wards, to the Superintendent or Supervisoress.

SEC. 14. No conversation will be allowed with patients through the windows by any person whatever.

SEC. 15. All persons holding keys (with such exceptions as the Superintendent may make) will, before leaving the Hospital, put their *keys* in a place designated for that purpose, They are NEVER to lend their keys to any person without directions to that effect from the Superintendent.

SEC. 16. Visitors to minor officers, or to persons employed in and about the Hospital in any capacity, are not to be taken through the wards and grounds without permission from the Superintendent, and it is desirable that *these visits be as brief as possible.*

SEC. 17. Attendants, and all others will, in no case, visit the friends of patients to report their condition, without the express permission of the Superintendent.

SEC. 18. No person employed in and about the Institution shall use intoxicating liquors at home or abroad. The practice of profane swearing, or other immoral conduct, will not be tolerated under any circumstances.

SEC. 19. Whenever persons employed wish to give up their situations, they may be required to give four weeks' notice of their intention, but they will be allowed to leave sooner if it is practicable.

SEC. 20. Whenever the Institntion wishes to dispense with the services of any one, two weeks' notice will be given, or payment for that period, at the discretion of the Superintendent.

SEC. 21. Whenever any one is discharged, however, for any violation of rules or improper conduct, no such notice will be given, nor payment made beyond the time of discharge.

SEC. 22. As some worthy and well intentioned persons do not possess the requisite qualifications for success in such a sphere of duty, the officers of the Hospital expressly reserve the right at any time to dispense with the services of any one, in accordance with the provisions of the preceding section, and this with or without assigning their reasons therefor. Whenever any persons are not likely to gain credit or give satisfaction at a situation, it is no mark of disrespect to give them an opportunity to engage in some other pursuit better calculated to advance their own interests.

SUPERVISORS.

CHAPTER XI.

SECTION 1. The Supervisors shall spend their whole time not appropriated to other duties, in the immediate oversight of their respective wards. They shall very frequently pass through the different wards, especially those containing excited patients, and see that all the patients are made as comfortable at all times as circumstances will permit, and also see that the By-Laws of the Institution and the directions of the Superintendent are faithfully carried out by the attendants, and all persons employed therein.

SEC. 2. They will especially attend to the prevention of disturbances among the patients, to the preservation of order and quiet in the wards, and in all things assist in carrying out the general views and instructions of the physicians in reference to treatment of patients.

SEC. 3. They shall particularly attend to the maintenance of personal cleanliness among the patients, and to the neatness and good order of their apartments, clothing and bedding, and shall see that such of their bedding and clothing as may need cleaning and repairing, are collected every morning and sent to the laundry or sewing room, or repaired in the wards.

SEC. 4. In passing through the halls or dormitories, they shall observe whether the temperature and ventilation are such as are required, and if not, they are to inform the Superintendent or Assistant Physician immediately.

SEC. 5. The clothing of the patients shall be carefully examined by them at the time of admission, and they will attend to having it marked, and at all times report any deficiency to the proper officer.

SEC. 6. In cases of sickness, they will see that the sick are provided with whatever may be needed; that their food and medicine are carefully and regularly given them, and the instructions of the physicians most scrupulously complied with.

SEC. 7. They shall endeavor to encourage the attendants in their efforts to attain a higher tone of duty in their relations with the patients and each other, and to cultivate in their dress, manner, and personal habits, a feeling of self-respect and politeness. They shall

encourage in them a sentiment of respect for the officers of the Institution, so that the patients may be inspired with confidence in them. They shall communicate freely with the Superintendent as to the fitness of attendants for special duties, and any want of faithfulness which they may observe; also, as to any deficiencies in food sent to his or her wards, or in the washing. And in general, they shall be responsible for the proper deportment of attendants, to whom they shall be a guide and example.

SEC. 8. They shall keep a minute, in a book provided for that purpose, of the absence of attendants in their respective departments, and the length of time of such absence, the same to be preserved for the examination of the Superintendent, and they shall know, at all times, who of the attendants, if any, are off duty.

SEC. 9. They shall also note, in a book provided for that purpose, any instance of neglect of duty or harsh treatment of patients on the part of attendants, which may come to their knowledge. They shall note all the wants of the Hospital in their respective departments, together with such facts and occurrences as they may deem in any degree important to the well-being of the Institution or the patients, and report the same daily, or as often as circumstances may require, to the Superintendent.

SEC. 10. They will be present at the admission and discharge of their respective patients, examine them particularly for money and valuables, and especially everything that may be dangerous about their persons; attend to having them bathed as soon as practicable, and report to the physicians any bruises or indications of injury or eruptive disorder that may be discovered, and whether or not they have been vaccinated.

CHAPTER XII.

Duties of Attendants.

SECTION 1. The attendants shall have the immediate and constant case and supervision of the patients. A few general facts and principles should be constantly kept in mind by all connected with the management of the insane, but more especially by the attendants, into whose never ceasing care and keeping they are entrusted.

1st. It is as clearly demonstrated as any mathematical truth, that insanity, in all its forms, is a *disease.*

2d. There is usually a loss or perversion of the sense of moral obligation, and inability to distinguish between right and wrong, and therefore, irresponsibility for words and actions.

3d. There is a full appreciation of all acts of kindness or cruelty, and in general, a perfect recollection of them after restoration, and in after life.

4th. There is usually a morbid or exalted sensitiveness in relation to what is due to them in attention and general deportment, and consequently irritation, excitement, or anger at either real or imaginary neglect or improprieties of treatment.

5th. The frequent occurrence of excitements aggravates and perpetuates the disease.

6th. The more the mind dwells upon or is reminded of hallucinations or delusions, the more permanently are they fixed; and so is the reverse true, that the more they are driven from the mind by occupation with other thoughts and ideas, the sooner do they disappear altogether.

SEC. 2. In all their intercourse with the patients, the attendants must treat them with respect; are to address them in proper tones of voice, and to avoid violence and rudeness of any kind. All questions are to be kindly and properly answered, and all reasonable requests are to be properly attended to. They should keep cool under the severest provocations, and never scold or dictate authoritatively. Whenever they desire anything done by a patient, the request is to be made in a respectful manner.

SEC. 3. The opposition of patients, and perhaps much of their violence, often arises from delusions that lead them to suppose that they are to be injured in some way, and every attempt to give them food and medicine, or to perform any necessary office for them, if done in an improper manner, only tends to confirm their false notions, and make resistance more obstinate and determined. The truth of these views is too well established to be questioned, and is often confirmed by convalescent patients who are able to describe their notions and feelings when in their state of greatest mental disturbance.

SEC. 4. Force, unfortunately, has to be used in every Institution

for the Insane, but *tact* and *kindness* may render its employment comparatively rare, and whenever it must be resorted to, a kind and respectful manner and sympathizing words may go far to convince even the most excited patients that what is done is from good motive, and that they have little to fear.

SEC. 5. *Under no circumstances* will an attendant be excused for inflicting a kick or blow, unless in the *clearest case of self-defense*, or to prevent committing self-hurt or injury to others.

SEC. 6. If patients engage in controversy or improper or exciting discussion, the attendant shall gently and promptly interfere and check them, and if the quiet and good order of the ward can not otherwise be preserved, the disorderly patients may be placed in their rooms, at the discretion of the attendant, care being taken to avoid all violence; and in such cases the Superintendent or Supervisor shall be notified as soon as possible. A kind word fitly spoken at such a time will prevent many a scene of excitement, just as dictation, harshness, anger or unkindness, or any rude act on the part of the attendant, may be the origin of trouble that may last for days.

SEC. 7. They are to avoid talking to patients about their delusions, and as much as lies in their power should prevent others from doing so.

SEC. 8. They must never allow patients to be laughed at or ridiculed on account of their delusions, or the peculiarity of their disorder.

SEC. 9. They must take every proper opportunity to inspire the patients with respect for, and confidence in, the officers, and to convince them of the true character of the Institution, and of its leading object—the promotion of the restoration of its patients.

SEC. 10. Deception should always be avoided, and promises should not be made that cannot be performed.

SEC. 11. Writing materials, books, or reading of any kind must not be furnished patients, without the sanction of the Superintendent. Letters, parcels, or packages, of any kind, are to pass through the hands of the officers.

SEC, 12. Any damage done by patients should be promptly reported to the Superintendent or Assistant Physician.

SEC. 13. Every attendant is responsible for every patient under his or her care, and is expected to be able at any moment to say

where each individual can be found. An attendant allowing a patient to go out of a ward, is responsible for his or her safe return, unless the permission has been granted by the consent of an officer.

SEC. 14. In those wards where there are two attendants one attendant must always be present with the patients in the ward, and endeavor to prevent violence, disorderly conduct, destruction of clothing, defacing of the ward in its furniture, or anything but the most correct deportment which must be inculcated with the utmost patience. When it is necessary to leave, except for a very temporary purpose, it must be known that a substitute fills the place.

SEC. 15. When patients remain more or less in their own rooms, the attendants are expected to find reasons for frequently calling at their rooms (without exciting suspicion, if possible), to see how they are engaged, or if they require any particular attention.

SEC. 16. The attendants will rise punctually at the ringing of the bell, and take charge of their wards before the night watch goes off their duty. They will then open the doors of all patients' rooms, and give them access to the ward (except in cases of high excitement), give them a kind greeting, or at least a "good morning," and see that they are properly dressed, and washed, and have their hair and clothes neatly and properly brushed before breakfast.

SEC. 18. Immediately after opening the doors and the rising of patients, attendants will see to the removal of chamber utensils from the rooms, and that they are well cleansed and the bedding laid out for airing. They will then commence putting the rooms and wards in good order, and after the beds and bedding have been properly aired, have them put up for the day.

SEC. 19. Each ward must be prepared for inspection at the Physician's visit by nine o'clock in the morning. Extra work, such as general cleaning and scrubbing of the wards, may be carried on at a later hour, and through the fore part of the day.

SEC. 20. Every part of the wards is to be kept scrupulously neat, clean, and as well ventilated as circumstances will permit. If an unpleasant odor is discovered, the cause of it is to be searched for and removed, if possible, at once, or report to the officers. If any part of a ward, private room, or dormitory, becomes soiled, it is to be cleaned at once, without regard to the time of day.

SEC. 21. If a bed, or the furniture of a room has been damaged,

it is to be promptly put in order. The rooms and corridors are to be scrubbed or rubbed as often as is neccessary to preserve scrupulous neatness. Spittoons are to be frequently looked after and kept clean. The water closets and urinals are to be carefully watched and prevented from impairing the purity of the air of the wards.

SEC. 22. *Nothing is clean enough if it can be made cleaner.*

SEC. 23. All beds that are soiled are to be removed from the wards as soon as possible after the rising of patients in the morning, and as soon as convenient, after breakfast clean ones substituted. If only a portion of the straw is wet or soiled, that portion of it only is to be removed and fresh straw put in its place; and if a mattress is wet or soiled, it is to be cleaned as well as possible, boiling water poured through the soiled and wet portions, and then thoroughly dried before being returned to the room.

SEC. 24. As the health of some patient requires that they be indulged in lying down some portion of the day, they are to be allowed to do so, and their rooms must be put in order as soon as they get up.

SEC. 25. Attendants will see that patients are up and in proper condition for breakfast at the prescribed hour. They will carefully observe, as they pass from the dining room to the wards, that they do not take any food with them, nor any of the table furniture, especially knives and forks, or any tinware. Knives and forks, and spoons should be carefully counted before and after each meal, and if any such instrument is missing, prompt measures must be taken for its recovery by instituting search, and giving information to the officers.

SEC. 26. If directions are given by the physician that certain patients take their meals in their rooms, or at a table in the ward, especial care is to be taken that their food is to be given to them as warm as possible and in good order, and if necessary, the attendant is to remain with them while they are eating.

SEC. 27. Any instructions which the officers may give about the manner in which the meals shall be served, are to be strictly and promptly attended to and complied with.

SEC. 28. Patients are not to be forced to take food but in the presence of the Supervisor or one of the officers, and never but by the express direction of one of the physicians.

Sec. 29. In cases of epilepsy, every fit, so far as known, shall be recorded in a book kept for that purpose. When a patient complains of being sick, or is known to be so, especially if there is diarrhœa or vomiting, the fact should be reported without delay to the physicians, and no food administered until the patient has been seen by one of the officers. Any supposed unexpected or striking effect in the operation of medicine is to be promptly reported.

Sec. 30. Unless a special exception is made by the physicians, every patient will take a warm bath once a week, and as much oftener as may be necessary for proper cleanliness. The temperature is to be such as is most grateful to the patients. Other baths shall be given as directed by the Superintendent. No persons are to bathe or be bathed later than 9 o'clock p. m., unless by special permission or direction.

Sec. 31. Shaving is to be done once a week by the attendants, unless in some cases of high excitement, and patients who desire to be shaved more frequently, are to be gratified in this particular. Great care should be taken that no injury is done with razors, all of which are to be carefully kept by the attendants. No patient is allowed to shave himself.

Sec. 32. It is desirable that every patient, not too sick or feeble, should walk out upon the grounds, or take a ride every day. As soon as possible after the physician's morning visit, in suitable weather, such attendants as can be spared, should prepare to go out with as many patients as it is proper to take at once—other attendants overlooking patients that may remain in the wards. Upon the return of one company another may go out, so that by turn all may enjoy the privilege.

Sec 33. When walking with patients, the attendants will direct where and how far they shall go, (care being taken to avoid localities favorable to escape,) and they shall be vigilant to keep them together and prevent strolling, taking care that no more are taken in one company than can be properly attended to. Patients must not be allowed to lie or sit on damp ground, or improperly expose themselves to the sun. Attendants, when not with patients, will avoid entering into conversation with each other, reading, etc., by which their proper supervision or vigilance may be prevented.

Sec. 34. No patients are to be out after sun-set without special

permission. Under no circumstances are patients to be taken beyond the boundary of the premises without permission.

SEC. 35. If any patient, having the knowledge of the grounds, or is absent by special permission, does not return at the appointed time, the attendant will at once report the fact to the officers.

SCE. 36. New patients are not to be taken out of the house until the Superintendent has signified his approbation of their having this privilege.

SEC. 37. Such patients as are deemed suitable will be allowed and advised by the officers to assist in the work about the premises, under the care of the attendants, gardener, or farmer; but no one is to be taken out of the wards for this purpose, unless permission is given by the officers. The attendants in charge of working parties, will keep a close observation of the patients, and prevent any disposition to escape, and see that they do not overwork themselves. They will avoid, carefully, every appearance of superintending the patients, or giving orders, but shall induce them to labor by persuasion, and if necessary by example, and instruct them so far as possible in the manner of doing the work.

SEC. 38. On Sunday afternoon, and in the evenings of enterments or lectures, as many attendants as the officers may direct shall accompany the patients, and no ordinary engagement must be allowed to interfere with this arrangement.

SEC. 39. The attendants designated to remain in the wards, must exercise *constant vigilance* to prevent elopements, suicide or mischief of any kind.

SEC. 40. As the entertainment, so far as dancing is concerned especially, is provided chiefly for the benefit and welfare of the patients (and some persons seem to constantly forget that this is the object for which they were established), it is understood that these entertainments are directly and wholly under the personal supervision of the Superintendent or Assistant Physician.

SEC. 41. It is recommended as pleasant and profitable to both, that the attendants of each ward read, or under their supervision engage some patient to read aloud each evening, for the benefit of all, from some book or magazine in the Hospital library. To this end they will be aided to any extent by the officers of the Institution in making selections.

SEC. 42. The various games of amusement are to be encouraged, but attendants are positively prohibited from engaging in games of amusement where there is not an equal number of patients engaged with them.

SEC. 43. Patients who are chiefly in the wards during the day, are not to retire before eight o'clock P.M., without permission, unless in case of sickness or fatigue. After eight o'clock P.M., patients may retire in any part of the house, but *all* must retire so as to allow the attendants to close their doors by 9:30 P.M.

SEC. 44. Attendants are expected to retire at ten o'clock P.M., and and after that hour no lignts must be kept burning in any room, except in case of sickness. In each ward, however, one light may be kept burning, as may be directed, to be available in case of emergency.

SEC. 45. *After patients have retired, all persons should avoid making any noise that might disturb patients or others who are in bed.*

SEC. 46. Unless otherwise directed, all clothing is to be kept outside of the rooms, neatly folded, and if possible laid on a chair or settee, and except in case of high excitement, is to be given to the patient when his door is opened in the morning.

SEC. 47. Before closing the door, the attendant is desired to wish the patient "good night," and certainly ascertain that the patient is in his room. When the door is locked it should be certain that the bolt has actually slipped.

SEC. 48. No patient's door is to be left unlocked during the night without special permission of the Superintendent, and notice being given to the attendant and watchman or watchwoman.

SEC. 49. If patients lodge in a different ward from that in which they pass the day, it is the duty of the attendant having them in charge during the day to take them to their rooms and see them comfortably in bed, at the same time informing the attendant of the apartment in which they sleep that he has done so, unless otherwise directed. It will also be the duty of the attendant in the ward in which they sleep to see them up and dressed in the morning, and returned in seasonable time to the ward from which they came the previous evening, notice being given to the attendant of that ward of their being returned.

SEC. 50. Whenever a patient becomes so noisy or violent that the

attendant, after trying all proper means, believes it necessary to place him in a private room, he should provide such assistance, if possible, (if he is so situated that he cannot call the supervisor or physicians) as will convince the patient that resistance will be useless, and then let it be done in the mildest and gentlest manner possible. When the patient has been placed in a room, the attendant, supervisor, or physician should, if possible, certainly tell him why he has been placed there, and that he will be permitted as soon as he is able to control himself, to go back to the ward from which he has been taken, No matter how unreasonable the patient appears, let this always be done. Let no patient be forced into a room and then the door closed without a word of explanation.

SEC. 51. A room having a wire or close shutter, or wicket door, is always to be selected for the seclusion of an excited patient. As soon as the patient is in a room, the fact is to be stated to the supervisor or physicians, who will without delay, inquire into the facts of the case.

SEC. 52. When it is necessary that patients should be secluded in their rooms, the attendant should be careful to see them frequently. and ascertain that they have everything proper that can minister to their comfort, and to know in what manner they are occupied.

SEC. 53. When a patient is very violent, one person on each side taking an arm, and a third at his back, can almost always carry any individual to his room, or remove him from ward to ward with but little difficulty or injury to anyone.

SEC. 54. As the use of restraining apparatus may be productive of many and serious evils, and as it is desirable to dispense with its use as far as possible, it must not be applied in this Hospital in any case except by the express direction of the Superintendent or, in his absence, of the Assistant Physician.

SEC. 55. Personal care and, that failing, seclusion to a private room must be relied on till the directions of the Superintendent or Assistant Physician can be obtained. Personal attention, it is well known, may in a great degree, take the place of mechanical restraint, though the latter may ultimately be necessary and even beneficial.

SEC. 56. Whenever patients are confined to a bed by restraining apparatus, used for that purpose, attendants must remember that when thus situated they may require even more attention than when able

to assist themselves, and in discharge of their duties under such circumstances, they may be required to sit with such patients when not engaged in other imperative duties.

SEC. 57. The escape of patients is always exceedingly annoying, and although such events will occasionally occur, it must never be allowed to be from neglect. An attendant's eye should always be kept on a patient known or supposed to be disposed to escape.

SEC. 58. Care must always be exercised to avoid, as far as possible, (when patients go out for exercise, amusement, or work,) those places favorable for hiding, and they must not be allowed to separate widely under any pretense whatever. If any patient gives trouble to the attendant or person in charge, the facts should be early reported to the superior officers.

SEC. 59. Instant, prompt, and faithful search should be made as soon as possible after the fact is known that a patient has escaped.

SEC. 60. If it is clearly made out that a patient has escaped through the carelessness, neglect, or want of proper vigilance of a person or persons in charge of them, it may be considered a sufficient cause of dismissal.

SEC. 61. When patients who have escaped are recovered and brought back, no offensive allusion is to be made to their escape, but they are to be treated in all respects as if nothing of the kind had occurred, but they are to watched more carefully in the future.

SEC. 62. Watchfulness should always be exercised, that patients do not make false keys, or provide themselves or each other with the means for making them, and that they do not plot together for the purpose of effecting an escape.

SEC. 63. Special care must be taken at all times, that patients do not become possessed of dangerous weapons of any kind. When anyone is known to have, or suspected of having any knife, fork, razor, false key, etc., and will not give it up, every possible means must be used to obtain it without delay, care being taken in the meantime that the article is not secreted where it cannot be found. Whoever may see anything lying about the wards or grounds that might prove dangerous in the hands of a violent or mischivous patient, is requested to secure it.

SEC. 64. When patients manifest a disposition to commit suicide, general experience proves that there is no certain security but by con-

stant watching. Uunsual care and vigilance should be exercised over their persons; they must be treated with great kindness and sympathy, and their attention drawn, as much as possible, from the delusions and fancies that prompt them to commit the act. Particular care should be taken to watch such persons about twilight or meal times, and at such times as the general attention is likely to be distracted from them.

SEC. 65. In case of a suicide, the attendant should maintain perfect composure, give prompt relief by cutting the noose, in case of suspension; stop the bleeding by lightly bandaging the part with a handkerchief or strip of cloth in case of a wound, care being taken that, in a wound of the throat, the bandage shall not impede respiration.

SEC. 66. Care should always be exercised that a knowledge of death in any form be kept from the patients, and *tact* used to direct their minds from the subject if it becomes one of discussion.

SEC. 67. The same care is necessary for the best welfare of all, that patients are kept, as far as possible, from a knowledge of what transpires in different wards, and in different parts of the Hospital; and attendants and all others are enjoined to be careful and guarded in their conversation before or in the hearing of patients.

SEC. 68. The attendants will be careful to see that patients change their clothes regularly, and gratify their reasonable requests in this particular as far as possible. Soiled clothes are not to remain in the patient's rooms, but must be put among those to be sent to the wash house. Clothes badly soiled must be rinsed or partially cleansed before being sent from the wards.

SEC. 69. The clothing of patients is to be kept as neat and clean as possible, and well sponged and brushed at all times. If buttons are missing, and a garment needs mending, it should be sent to the sewing room. When patients wet their clothes, they should be changed often to make them comfortable. The wet part of the clothing may be dipped in hot water and dried, but it is not to be worn again without undergoing this process.

SEC. 70. The female attendants, by the direction of the supervisors or superior officers, are expected to do what they can to preserve patients' clothing and keep them in proper repair, as far as they can, and avoid unnecessarily sending articles to the sewing room. All at-

tendants will take charge of any work sent to the wards, and encourage the patients to give such aid as may accomplish the work. Attendants can do no *private work*, except putting their own clothes in order, during the hours of duty; nor will they employ patients to work for them, if there is any required for the house, without permission.

SEC. 71. When officers or visitors are in the wards, the attendants are expected *to be present and rise*, to be prepared to give such information, and perform such service, as may be required of them.

SEC. 72. As the duties of the attendants (with such exceptions as have been indicated) are confined almost exclusively to single wards, they can have but rare calls in any other, unless specially directed by the proper authority. Attendants are not positively prohibited from visiting each other, but it must not become a habit, and it will be far better to obtain permission from the Supervisor and assure him that their wards are suitably attended during such time as they may wish, or as it may be proper for them to be absent. Any marked infringement of either the letter or spirit of this rule will not be allowed.

SEC. 73. Patients are not to visit from ward to ward without permission from the Supervisor or one of the Physicians, and no patient is to be transferred from one ward to another except as herein provided, without the sanction of the Superintendent, or in his absence, the Assistant Physician.

CHAPTER XIII.

Night Watch.

SECTION 1. The night watch will commence duty at half past nine o'clock in the evening, at which time he will visit the medical office for special instructions for the night. He must keep moving about from ward to ward till the attendants rise and take charge of their patients in the morning, and he will report to them anything he ought to know of what transpired in their respective wards during the night. He will also make a written report to be left in the medical office. He will be constantly vigilant to guard against fires and the escape of patients from the windows, and he must take no notice of

being spoken to by patients from the windows. He is to ring the bell at the prescribed hour, start the fires in the kitchen and perform such other duties as may be assigned him.

SEC. 2. He will know if the attendants are in their rooms at ten o'clock, and after that hour through the night, and report any deviation from this rule.

SEC. 3. He shall specially look after the sick and suicidal; notice unusual sounds in the patients' rooms and ascertain their cause, and endeavor, as well as he may be able, to tranquilize those who are excited, or allay the fears of the timid. He may give notice where it is needed, and attend to any reasonable wants. In going about he will make as little noise as possible, and at once awake the attendant in an emergency.

SEC. 4. He will faithfully report all irregularities or violation of rules, and how new patients and the sick have passed the night.

SEC. 5. The watchwoman will confine herself to the wards occupied by female patients, and be governed by the rules prescribed for the watchman.

SEC. 6. All will be constantly vigilant and perform their responsible duties with strict fidelity. Any want of fidelity attaching to these offices must iustantly disqualify them for their stations.

SEC. 7. The attendants, and other employes, being up and in charge of their duties, the duties of the watch will cease till two o'clock P.M., after which they may be called upon for various services till supper is over, from which time they will be released till the usual hours of duty.

SEC. 8. If fire is discovered that cannot readily be extinguished, the attendants and officers should be aroused without causing a general alarm if possible.

CHAPTER XIV.

Duties of the Seamstress.

SECTION 1. The seamstress will have charge of the sewing room, under the direction of the Matron or Supervisoress. She will have the care of, and be responsible for, all material and apparatus belonging to her department, and she will have the care and oversight of

the patients who may be allowed to come from the wards to work under her direction, and she will endeavor to make their time and work useful, and at the same time as much a pleasure and pastime as possible.

SEC. 2. She will promptly report any improper conduct on the part of patients. Such patients as may be allowed, may be taken from the wards, provided no new patient, or patient who has been guilty of misbehavior, shall be taken from the ward without permission.

SEC. 3. The Supervisoress may take patients to and from the sewing room if so directed by the Superintendent.

SEC. 4. Neither the sewing machine, nor any article or material belonging to the sewing room, is to be used for any other purpose than the necessary work of the Hospital or its patients without special permission.

CHAPTER XV..

Duties of the Carpenter.

SECTION 1. The Carpenter shall have the immediate care and cbarge of the carpenter shop, lumber, tools, and materials of all kinds belonging to that department of the Institution, and is enjoined to be careful of their economical use. He will not allow any one to make use of the tools or lumber without the permission of the Superintendent; and if tools are taken from the shop for any purpose and are not promptly returned, he will report the fact to the Superintendent.

SEC. 2. He will prevent attendants, patients, and others from remaining in the shop without permission, or unless they have been sent there to work, or for special service.

CHAPTER XVI.

Duties of the Engineer.

SECTION 1. The Engineer, under the direction of the Superintendent, shall have charge of the engine and boiler room, pumping and steam apparatus: and the fireman and all others employed under him, shall be subject to his directions. It shall be his duty to fur-

nish steam for the whole building, and for cooking and washing; keep the tanks well supplied with water, and sufficient hot water for all uses for which it may be needed.

SEC. 2. He will have charge of all tools and stock in his department; see that they are properly preserved and cared for, and that good order and system prevail.

SEC. 3. He will make such repairs and alterations as may be needed of the apparatus under his care.

CHAPTER XVII.

Duties of the Farmer.

SECTION 1. The Farmer, under the direction of the Superintendent, will have the general care and supervision of the farm, and the men employed in his department. He will have special care and oversight of all farming tools and implements, the stock of all kinds, and shall see that they are cared for. He shall keep a correct account of all articles raised on the farm, and preserve order and system in all that pertains to his charge.

SEC. 2. He will make such arrangements for conveying patients to church on Sunday, or to ride on week days, as may be desired by the superintendent. He shall designate the persons whose duty it shall be to carry this regulation into effect.

SEC. 3. He will perform any other duties that the Superintendent may assign him.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Duties of the Gardener.

SECTION 1. The Gardener, under the direction of the Superintendent, will have the care of the garden and pleasure grounds, and greenhouse, and will see that they are kept in good order, and that those who aid him in his duties perform their work faithfully. He will take care of all implements belonging to his department, and see that they are properly preserved.

SEC. 2. He will consult the Superintendent in reference to such seeds as may be required, and the amount and variety of vegetables and fruits it is desirable to raise.

SEC. 3. He will see that the kitchen is promptly supplied each morning, or at other times in the day if so directed, with such vegetables as may be required.

SEC. 4. He will, if possible, prevent any depredations being committed in the garden or nursery, and keep a correct account of all the products of the garden and nursery, which shall be exhibited as often as desired.

MISCELLANEOUS PROVISIONS.

SECTION 1. All persons employed in the premises, and not mentioned in the foregoing rules and regulations, are expected to be governed by their general spirit, in the performance of whatever duties may be assigned them.

SEC. 2. In order that employes, both male and female, may be made as familiar as possible with the duties belonging to their situations, a copy of these rules and regulations will be furnished to each person mentioned therein, upon entering upon their duties, which shall be preserved and given up whenever they leave or are discharged. Each employe must give his copy into the office every Saturday evening, and a memorandum of its having been received will be made. It is hoped this measure will insure the frequent careful reading of the rules, and ignorance of the details will not be admitted as an excuse for their not being observed.

SEC. 3. Strangers and others may visit such parts of the Institution as are allowed by the Superintendent, on any day (*except Sunday, on which day visitors shall not be admitted*) between the hours of two and four o'clock P.M., and special care is to be taken that no amount of visiting is permitted in the wards which might prove injurious to patients.

SEC. 4. *Visits of friends to persons engaged in the Hospital must be made in the Reception Room, and must be brief.*

SEC. 5. The Sabbath shall be observed as a day of rest and quiet at the Hospital.

SEC. 6. In the absence of the Chaplain, the Superintendent may procure the attendance of some clergyman on each Sabbath day, to perform auch services as he may direct, and may also provide for lec-

tures and other literary exercises during the week, as he may deem of advantage to the patients.

SEC. 7. These By-Laws can be amended or repealed at any meeting of the Board by a vote of the majority of the Trustees, notice thereof having been given at a previous meeting.

Q. These are furnished to every attendant?

A. Yes, sir; or at least there is one on every hall where the attendants are, so they have access to it.

Q. You may state if special attention is called to any rule in it when an attendant is hired into the Asylum, and if so just take the book and name the rule and point out specifically, to which rules special attention is called?

A. Section 5, page 12, of the By-Laws; that section is always marked.

Q. State in the same connection what special measures were taken —what was done by you—in reference to that?

A. These By-Laws are frequently called for, for the purpose of calling attention to some special by-law, and these laws are marked; lines drawn across the book, or in some special way so that it will be understood, that particular attention is called to that particular by-law, or at least to that particular section.

Q. You may now state to the committee what you do in reference to the enforcement or non-enforcement of these By-Laws and Rules?

A. If we find any neglect in reference to these By-Laws, we call the attention of the attendant to them, and if any of special importance are violated, we regard that as sufficient grounds for discharge of the attendant without notice.

Q. Do you know of cases where discovery is made of violations of these rules and that you discharged the attendant?

A. Yes, sir; any of those that we regard as essential.

Q. How is it with this one you have specially adverted to?

A. That is our strictest care; we give more strict attention to this than to any other.

Q. That you regard as essential?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You heard the testimony of the various witnesses who have testified before this committee detailing particular acts, of what they have pleased to call acts of neglect or cruelty?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, will you take up each particular act as you call it to mind, and state the facts in relation to it so far as you have any knowledge of the same?
A. I do not know as I have any absolute knowledge of any of these occurrences, except as they relate to myself; at the time, I inquired into them; some occurred while I was away.

Q. Now, take first those of which relate to yourself, of which you have special knowledge?
A. The first was with reference to taking a lady patient away from a window, in which the witness swore that I choked the patient.

Q. Do you remember what witness that was?
A. I don't remember the name; it was a colored man; would I be permitted to detail a little?
A. Yes, sir.
A. (Continuing) This lady is what we term a violent patient, and by some means she had managed to get out through the brick wall where the workmen were building the addition.

Q. That was previous to this?
A. Yes, sir; and we believed from the circumstances, and from what we knew, and from what we gathered in one way or another, that she had assistance from outside parties. After that we made an effort to keep her away from having conversation with those parties whom we suspected. She was kept in her own room. Each one of the patients had a room to themselves, but she was allowed to come out into the hall at meal time, and at some other times when the attendants were not busy so that they could attend to her and keep her away from the windows. If we went away, she went to the window and commenced to talk to a colored man down on the ground, and the girls called to me, and the attendants called to me, that she was talking to the colored man contrary to my instructions, and they

could not get her away, and I went up and took her away. I asked her to come away and she refused, and then I went in and took hold of her arm, I think, but she is a very strong woman, very strong and violent, and I could not pull her away by the arm. Then I think I put my arm around her neck, and put my foot against the window casing and pulled her hands loose from the grates, and took her out into the hall, and with the assistance of the attendants, took her back into her room.

Q. Was this colored man with whom she was talking one of the colored men whom you had suspected of assisting her to escape before?

A. We had suspected some of them; I did not know; we had strong grounds for such suspicion.

Q. You may state just briefly the matter of the escape, and what occurred?

A. Well, the brick could not be taken out from the inside of the building--that was the first suspicion we had.

Q. The brick were taken out of the wall?

A. Yes, sir; taken out of the wall from the outside.

Q. And she escaped through the hole made?

A. Yes, sir; that was in the third story, and she went out of the wall into the addition that was building; there were no floors there, and only a board here and there, and ladders to go down, and I did not believe she could get down there alone.

Q. Were these colored men working around there during this time?

A. Yes, sir; they were at work there at the time, and they were frequently talking with the patients; the window was open and there was nothing to hinder, and they could look right in the same as into an open door.

Q. If there were any other facts or circumstances occurring afterwards to corroborate that, state them.

A. We afterwards found that she had $385 secreted about her clothes that we had overlooked, and when we took it from her, she appeared to have something secreted, and the attendant thought that

she had secured some weapon. When they come to search her, she had this money, and when they took it from her she said there was $400 in the roll, but she gave fifteen dollars to a treacherous colored man who promised to take her to Lincoln, but he just took her down to the ground and left her. Concluding that there might be some truth in it, we took the precaution to keep her away from the windows.

Q. You may state what trouble the attendants had, and in what method this money that was found was secreted?

(The witness then made a private statement to the committee.)

Q. Was there any choking? Did you choke this woman?

A. No, sir; I never took my hand to her throat at all; I put my arm around to her neck to get a strong hold; I could not pull her away by the arm, and I might say that the way the bed and the window is situated, only one person could get in there; there is not room for any two persons to get in and use any force to remove the patient; I could do better alone than with the attendants.

Q. Take the next case?

A. I think the next relating to me is the one that Mr. Druse refers to; that is an unqualified falsehood; nothing of the kind ever happened, or nothing approximating to it.

Q. State if there were any circumstances out of which it could have grown; any little thing?

A. I had at first thought that it might be possibly a case out of which it might be made, but it was of a different date, so that if his date is right there was nothing ever occurred to make it out of.

Q. State to the Senators what occurred out of which you thought it might have grown at any other date?

A. Not far from that time there was a patient brought from Lincoln; she was a perfect terror—violent.

Q. Do you mean Lincoln county?

A. This town. I heard a noise and some screaming. I was at the dinner table and knew by the sound there was something going on of a violent character, and I jumped up and ran to the ward door and found the attendant on the outside of the door and the

patient trying to get out of the door and the attendant trying to hold it together and she was crying out for help. I found that the patient had taken her keys; had seized the ring of the keys and jerked them away and pushed her out of the ward, and she was making an effort to keep the patient from escaping, and they were struggling at the door, the attendant having the advantage by reason of being on the outside where there were steps leading up to the door; she had a chance to brace and pull the door, and she kept her until I got there, and then the next thing was to regain the keys. I stepped into the ward with Dr. McGlumphy and Mrs. Daily, with the attendants. There was four of us and we succeeded in taking the keys away, and we had some little struggle with her after she had the door open. I thought that might be the case he referred to.

Q. What was the date of that transaction?

A. I think it was the 29th of May; I would not be positive, but it was not the same date that he gave; he gave the 6th of May; however, I am not positive about the date, but it was some time after that.

Q. Was there anything transpired there out of which this story of Mr. Druse of what occurred on the 6th of May could have grown?

A. No, sir; because anything of that kind would be fixed in my mind; I have no doubt but that I would remember anything of that kind; I might say I know I should remember it.

Q. Now take up the next matter relating to yourself?

A. That is the statement of Miss Sisson, last evening. We have a patient there by the name of Anna Erickson, as she stated, who is a nymphomaniac; she is a large, active person, and any man going into the ward, if she can get a chance, she will grab them and cling to them and hug them; she seizes them about the neck or in any manner that she can hold them, and its almost impossible to get her off without tearing her clothes. On that account they frequently kept her in the room, but, of course, occasionally she is out. She had made similar efforts to get hold of us before whenever she was on the ward; but the time she speaks of, I supposed the patients were all in bed, and I went up for some errand, to speak to the attendant, and they were on the hall and the doors were all closed, and I supposed the patients were locked in; but as we were talking, they were

not far from me. This patient came out of the room and ran with her night dress on. She was prepared for bed and she came out and ran for me, and, of course, knowing the patient and seeing her come towards me, I knew what to expect; it had occurred so many times that I concluded that I would take some way to prevent her getting hold of me; being undressed, it would be very difficult to disengage her hands and arms; so that I put my hand out in this way (illustrating, arm extended, thumb and fingers spread as in act of grabbing, so as to form letter V), I managed it so as to have her neck come in contack with it and put it under her chin, so that the thumb would be on one side of her neck and the fingers on the other. She pressed up against my hand and tried to reach me, but I kept my arm stiff and she could not get hold of me. She struggled quite a little time and tried to reach me, and tried to reach down further so as to get hold of me, but I kept her at a distance. She, of course, could back away at any time when she was ready, into the middle of the room, but I kept my arm straight, and she pressed up there a little while, and finally relaxed and I wheeled around behind and I put her in the room and the girls locked the door.

Q. Did you choke her at all?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you tighten up the grip of your fingers and thumb?
A. No, sir; I didn't tighten up on her at all; the game was to keep her away, and I took that way to do it. Of course, these insane people are very tenacious in what they undertake to do, and she pressed up pretty firmly for say half a minute, until she found it got uncomfortable and seemed to feel the pressure against my hand, and then she relaxed back. Of course, she could have done so at any instant that she desired to do so.

Q. Is that all of that case?
A. That is all of it.

Q. Now go over and give the Senators the facts in these other matters testified to by Miss Sisson, and the circumstances attending the same?
A. It has been the custom with me since I have been at that institution to keep a very sharp lookout for everything that I could; I

naturally am inclined to be watchful of anything I have anything to do with, and I am a bad sleeper I might say, and any little thing wakes me; it was always so all my life, and any time when I hear a noise that seems to indicate there is trouble, whether these are night watches or not, I usually get up and step out into the hall where I can hear plainly, and if I do not see the night watch or learn that they are on the way, or are where the noise is, I call them and send them. If I find that they are out of hearing and I see no light—they always have a lantern—if I see no light and the case seems to be very urgent, I go to find out what it is; but I can only go into the male wards. The night watch has the keys of the female wards, and the girls in the wards; no one else has any keys to the female wards except the night watch and the female attendants. We have a way of calling them when we want to go in. The time that Miss Sisson speaks of, especially, the night watch was sick, and in that ward was an old lady who was very sick, and the night watch being sick, I felt somewhat uneasy about leaving her alone and no one go near her during the night; so I took the night watch key and went in there several times during the night, just as I thought I ought to do, to attend to whatever she needed—give a drink of water—frequently she had nourishment or milk and water and so on—and to attend to her wants. I took the trouble to go myself. I would say that the girls there had to work very hard and I didn't feel at liberty to call them at night.

Q. When you say the girls you mean the female attendants?

A. Yes, sir. On this occasion when I went in there was some person speaking across the hall; they wanted something, when I went and unlocked the door they said they wanted a drink of water. I went to the dining room and unlocked the door and got a cup of water and took it in and the patient drank the water, and I took the cup and carried it out into the dining room and locked the door. She says there was another patient sleeping with this one, and I believe this was correct.

Q. That is all there was of that?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. She spoke of another case?

A. The other case was we had a hysterical girl there—what is

called hysterical mania—and she had spells of crying and screaming, and she would commence rather moderately crying until finally she would get into a perfect scream. And if we left her to herself she would scream all night, and of course keep them all awake, not only in the hall, but in the other parts of the building, and we could hear her nearly all over the building. They can scream as no one else can scream. When these spells come on, we take some means to try to hush them up. Sometimes we succeed and sometimes not, but usually the noise can be stopped. While there was no night watch to go, the same as in the other case, I went in and just told her to hush up, and went to the bed and put my hand on her mouth to stop the noise, and get her quiet; when she is once stopped, she will keep still, and that, however, was quite a common thing with that patient. Whether I went or whether the attendant went, but it sometimes happened in the day time, and they would call me to that patient. See was not always in that hall; she was at different times on every hall in the female wards.

Q. State in that connection in what manner she was treated in hushing her up, whether there was any violence used upon her.

A. Oh, no. No, it was not necessary to use any violence at all, it was just simple to break up the sound. The sound seemed to keep up the desire to make it, and when you once interfere in that way, she will quiet down and perhaps be quiet all night, and sometimes she would get to crying again. These spells were only occasional. Perhaps once in a week, or a few weeks.

Q. On that night had her crying attracted you attention from below where you were?

A. Yes, sir. I was in bed and got up and dressed myself to go in. I knew by the sound who it was. We get accustomed to the different voices of the patients, and when one falls in a fit we know who it is, and if I hear the voice, I know what has happened and do not go. Those that have frequent fits, they have a cry peculiar to themselves. Almost every one that has fits and has been there long, I know who it is and know what has happened.

Q. Are there any other circumstances connected with this hysteria girl and your visiting that room that you have omitted? If so, state them.

A. No, sir, I do not think of any. I think I have stated it pretty clearly.

Q. There was one other case mentioned by Miss Sisson?

A. Yes, I remember that very well.

Q. Just give the facts in relation to that?

A. I heard two persons in the female hall crying out and screaming and quarreling. I could distinguish by their voices they were quarreling, and I supposed they were fighting. We sleep a great many patients two in a bed, and sometimes they get to quarreling and fighting, and there being no night watch, I do not know what might take place. They were pretty violently screaming, and when wakened right out of a sound sleep, we are not able to state exactly what the stage of the difficulty is, and it struck me that this was a very urgent case, and I remember as I was getting up my wife called out to me to hurry. I put on my pants and slippers and went into the hall. Now I might explain how the hall is. It is the same as this hall here, and the patients are in the room like there leading from the hall. When I got into the hall, I discovered who it was; I knew by the voices who the patients were. They were old patients, and I knew there was no danger, but that it was simply a quarrel, and I need have no fears of any very serious result, and I went and rapped on the door and told them to be still, and they quieted and I went out. I believe I just had my pants and slippers on.

Q. Is that all there was of that?

A. That is the whole story.

Q. You say you heard two female voices crying. Where were you when you heard them?

A. I was in the center building on the same story that those patients were.

Q. In your bed?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you think of any other cases that were mentioned that you have any personal knowledge of?

A. I had no personal knowledge, only as I gained it by examining into the case?

Q. You took up the cases in detail on the order in which they had

been given, and state what facts you know or ascertained at the time, and how you ascertained them at the time of the occurrence?

A. The case I think first was of Hedrick, that the man took away from the mortar box. The man is well and has gone home now.

Q. What about that?

A. I learned they had a little difficulty with him out in the yard. When they come in if they have had any trouble, they usually report it whatever it is; they reported to me or to Dr. Hay.

Q. Is it their duty to do that?

A. Yes, sir, they are required to report all cases of any trouble with the patients. I went in and saw the man just after he came in, but I saw nothing of it outside.

Q. What was his condition?

A. There was no appearance of any violence at all; there were no scratches upon him, and it didn't appear that anything had happened that required any very strict investigation beyond that; there was no appearance of any violence.

Q. No blood or bruises?

A. No bruises of any consequence, and the man never had any while he was there.

Q. Did he complain of being hurt?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you make an examination of him at the time?

A. I didn't undress him; I just noticed his face, and so far as I could see without undressing him, there were no appearances of his having had any trouble.

Q. Did he appear to be suffering any?

A. No.

Q. And when did that occur?

A. Well, I could not give the date; it was along sometime during the latter part of summer or fall; it was while they were building.

Q. That was the case at the mortar-box.

A. Yes, sir. I might state in this connection in regard to the patient's going out: They go out right close to the new building; the door is three or four feet from the work on the new building; they passed right out by the new building; my instructions to the attendant were to be careful to keep the patients away from the new building, and not let them interfere with the men, so as to prevent them being hurt around the building; I told him if anything should occur to these men by any negligence, we never should hear the last of it, if a stone or brick should drop down and break a man's skull, or anything of that sort, and the only safety would be to keep them away entirely, and not allow them to climb out, or get in there, or in any way to meddle with the building.

Q. At the time, did any workman, or anybody, challenge your attention to the fact that this patient at the mortar-box had been roughly handled or used?

A. No, sir; I knew nothing of it all, except what I learned in the way I have stated; that I learned from the attendants; they said they had a little trouble with him; I knew he had been troublesome that day, and what we call a little off—that is, worse some days than others.

Q. And this was one of his off days?

A. Yes, sir; just how much it amounted to I didn't inquire into it because I saw the person was not injured, and that is the best evidence to me I can get.

Q. Now give the next case.

A. The next case I don't think I knew anything at all about; that is the case of a man falling down in a fit, and the attendants jumping on him and pounding him.

Q. Do you know the patient to which they refer?

A. I think I know the patient from a very simple circumstance which they mentioned, and what I had learned from the attendants and others since I heard the story; that is all I knew of it.

Q. Who is the man?

A. The man's name is Palmer.

Q. What is the nature of his insanity?

A. He is an epileptic.

Q. Did anybody at any time inform you, or had you any knowledge of, this alleged mistreatment?

A. No, sir; I never heard of it.

Q. Until you heard it testified to here?

A. No, sir; I would say they didn't always relate those cases to me, but their instructions are always to relate anything in the way of violence or any difficulty with the patients either to me or to Dr. Hay; if they come to him, and he thinks there is no special importance, he drops it there; if he thinks it is of any consequence, then he comes to me.

Q. You know the time at which the witnesses testified this occurred? have you any recollection of the time? do you know whether you were there or not?

A. I think I was there; I was not away more than over to town; I was not at any distance.

Q. Have you any recollection of observing that this particular patient was in any way injured?

A. No, sir; he is an epileptic, and falls frequently and gets bruises.

Q. He gets bruises in his falling?

A. Yes, sir; in his falling.

Q. When these fits come on him he falls as though he was dead?

A. They most all have some peculiar feature at the time they have fits; some will start and pull around violently and go down, and some will slide down easily, and so on, but this man springs right up from the floor and gives a jump, and then goes down like a stick of wood, and thus falls very heavily; he will weigh about two hundred, and is a very powerful, violent man at times when he has fits.

Q. When these fits are upon him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now take up the next case and tell what you know about that?

A. I am not quite clear what the next case relates to; it might be the case of a man being struck with a brick.

Q. What about that?

A. I did not understand the story that way at all; it was not told to me that way, and there was no evidence that the man had been struck with a brick.

Q. State the facts and the condition of the patient at that time, and what did occur?

A. This was the man Ryma that threw me down that I was mentioning, and he was known to be a violent man and also an epileptic; the way the story was told to me was that Ryma caught up a brick and stood in a threatening manner towards the attendant who was trying to get him into the house; they were returning to the house, and the man was for some reason unwilling to come in, and he caught up a brick, and the attendant told me that he followed him up cautiously, and he kept backing up until he got near enough to him, and he caught him around the waist, and when he caught him he dropped the brick and undertook to grapple with him, and he threw him, and in that way they got possession of him and took him into the building.

Q. Did you see the patient immediately after he was taken into the building?

A. I do not think I saw him after he was taken into the building; I think I heard of it after the occurrence; I did not hear of it immediately.

Q. Were there any bruises or blood—state his physical condition?

A. I think there were some little bruises about his face, or on the side of his face, but nothing unusual with that man, because he used to fall in fits frequently, and it was so often that he had the bruises that I didn't think there was anything remarkable about it. I am not positive that I knew he got bruised at that time.

Q. Who was the attendant that had that man in charge?

A. The patient belonged in the third ward, but the attendant, I think, who brought him in, was Mr. Christner, the man in the second ward.

Q. Where is he now?

A. He is employed at the Hospital, and is now present in the room.

Q. Pass to the next case?

A. The case of the man going to the water-cooler to get water, I never heard of until I heard it here; and the man that was knocked down, as they state, and turned heels over head, I never heard of until I heard of it here.

Q. Was it stated who was the attendant on that man?

A. I do not recollect, but the man that had a broken rib, I heard all about that.

Q. State the facts about that?

A. Dr. Hay was out to see the man while they were having the tussle with him, and he told me what he saw, and the attendant told what had happened. The man had just come here the day or a day or two before from Iowa, and he started to go back when they went out. The attendants were strangers to him, and these men are generally a little more troublesome until they get acquainted with the attendants. The attendant went to bring him back and he didn't recognize him as his attendant, and he refused to come back; another attendant saw he was having a little trouble getting him back, and he went to assist him, and finally they took hold of him and he began to struggle, and they threw him down. A patient, who is quite apt to be meddlesome in one way or another, saw the struggle and thought he had to do something, ran up and kicked him in the ribs.

Q. What patient was that?

A. His name is Deitrich Myers; and Dr. Hay about that time came up to the patient; he quite frequently goes out to help take the patients out and take them in, and he has more directly the care of the men in all these transactions than I had. He went up to where they were and he said they were afraid to let him up, but finally he said let him up anyway, and so they let him up and took him into the house.

Q. Then it was another patient that rushed up there and kicked him?

A. Yes; I took his word for it in that case.

Q. That patient was Deitrich Myers?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now were there any other cases?

A. I would say farther in this case, that the patient seemed to suffer some from this injury, and Dr. Hay examined it and concluded the rib was broken. The patient had had the rib broken before while he was in Iowa; he was a man they had had some trouble with.

Q. While he was in the Iowa Asylum?

A. Yes, sir. He had already put the bandage on, and with the bandage on I could not discover whether the rib was broken or not; I knew if it was broken that was right, and he didn't seem to be suffering and I let it lay, and in about two weeks he seemed to be as well as ever and the bandage was taken off.

Q. There was another case, that was the escaping patient over across the creek?

A. I was away from home and didn't know anything about it except what they told me when I came back.

Q. Where were you at that time?

A. I was over to town, and when I got home at night I was told that the man ran away and they brought him back, and I inquired of Dr. Hay if he was hurt and he said he showed fight and the attendants threw him down; he could see them though he was quite a distance away, and he examined it when he came in and he said he was not hurt; I din't see the patient until the next morning.

Q. What was his condition when you saw him the next morning?

A. It was just as it was before they had any trouble with him; I didn't see any—I think though he had a little scratch on his face, but nothing of any consequence or nothing that would be thought anything of.

Q. Do you think of any other instance that has been narrated or has not been narrated?

A. I could mention a great many that have not been narrated, because these difficulties we expect.

Q. But where a patient was struck or kicked by an attendant?

A. Yes, I have known them. We have had occasion, of course, to discharge I do not know but twenty or thirty men for what I thought was improper treatment of patients.

Q. Now, when it came to your knowledge that an attendant had kicked or struck a patient, what did you do?

A. Unless I was thoroughly satisfied that it was necessary for his own protection, I discharged him; I never failed to send a man away that abused a patient, if I knew it, unless I was thoroughly satisfied that it was the best he could do.

Q. Have you a record of the discharges and the cause for discharges?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, I will ask you if you will make out a table and hand to the committee, showing the names of the employes, when employed, when discharged, and for what cause discharged?

A. Yes, I can do that.

Q. Can you have it done to-morrow?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And hand it to Senator Connor?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you think of any other case that has been mentioned by the witnesses?

A. I do not know that I recollect of any other case. I recollect of their speaking of a man that started to go away, and the attendant went after him and he brought him back, and he struck him and kicked him as he was coming back. He went off by the south wing, and one of the lady attendants told me of the occurrence, and I called the man to account for it and he confessed to the facts in the case and I discharged him. Of course I should never have known it except this attendant on the female side said she saw a certain person abuse a patient, and she thought it was her duty to let me know it.

Q. And that was the case on the south wing?

A. Yes, sir, that was four years ago.

Q. Do you remember the name of the attendant that was discharged?

A. No, sir. I cannot tell the name of the attendant.

Q. Do you remember the name of the patient?

A. No, sir. I am not sure that I remember the name of the patient.

Q. Do you know anything about this man that threw Taylor down?

A. Yes, sir, that is the same Deitrich that kicked the man in the ribs.

Q. Did you know about the circumstances?

A. I knew that he had a little trouble with him, but I did not know just the character of it until since this investigation commenced. He is the man that says he owns the place and owns everything about there, and he goes about and does a great deal of good work, and brings in the vegetables and is quite a useful man around, but still he owns everything and we regard him as a harmless man, except that he sometimes interferes as he did in this case, and thinks he has something to do with it and will just bolt along and interfere, and we have to set him back a little, but in this case he came in and discharged Mr. Taylor and told him to go out of the store-room, that was his store and he would run it.

Q. Will you tell the committee about Lawson's brother? You will recollect Mr. Lawson's evidence here.

A. Mr. Lawson's brother came to the hospital, a very wild, crazy man. He was a very large, robust fellow, and I think the stoutest man in the house at the time he was there. It was during the early part of the summer I think that he was there, but I am not just positive that was just the the time, but it was during pleasant weather, and these men frequently go out when they want anything, and they go out and do any kind of work that is being done suitable for them to do, and this man went out to where they were digging up a couple of hitching posts, they wanted to move them further away after the new building was put up, and after he got it loosened a little he took hold of the post and pulled it out of the ground and threw it around over his head as easily as a person would a common sized cane, and the men around him all ran away; they were afraid of him, and he went to work and dug the other up alone and pulled that up and threw it around and he acted so strangely they were rather afraid to go near him, and finally we sent for a man to come and take him into the house, and he took him in, and from that we

concluded he was not a safe man to go out, but they had trouble with him frequently on the ward, and whenever he made a move it was to hurt somebody. They sometimes had to use some means to restrain him so that he could not have the use of his arms to hit out and hurt other patients. At one time that I remember of, I went up into the ward and he had a black eye. I said to the attendant "What has happened to this man?" and he said he was trying to run the ward this morning and got into trouble with the other patients and they had to lay hold of him and confine him. I think he had on what we call wrist straps, that is, a strap around the wrist and going around the waist so that while they have the use of the arms, they could not strike out. He had quite a bad black eye, and knowing that he was a violent man, I took that as satisfactory.

Q. Which of these patients was it? I remember it being alluded to they knocked you down.

A. This was a patient named Willam Judd. He was a man that was in the Hospital when I came here. He was regarded as a violent man, and the worst man in the house for probably a year or two. He was a man that was dreaded by every body in the house more than any other. He was a perfect maniac—as perfect as a picture could be drawn or described, and I went up to the ward and told him that a friend had called to see him. The only person that had ever called to see him when I was there, and he was in the room and I said "Judd, there is a friend come to see you;" and without raising his eyes, he drew up and struck me and he struck me in the region of the heart. Of course, a perfectly unexpected blow knocked me down, and knocked me clear out of the room and that is the last I knew about it for a space of I don't know how long, but I was lying on the bed the first I knew, and the other night was the first time I told anybody out side of the ward. I told them not to say anything about it.

Q. Where was Mr. Druse then?

A. Mr. Druse was at work there.

Q. He alluded to something occurring in the ward. What I was inquiring particularly for was, to get at what he meant?

A. I remember the case that he was inquiring about; it was the case of Ryma, the same man that had the brick. Mr. Ryma, when he

first came there was determined to get out, and he said to me that he was going out of the ward dead or alive. Well, I tried to get away from him and backed back and kept backing towards the door. Just then the patients were going in to dinner, and I concluded that he would go into dinner, and that would allow me a chance to get a way from him. The attendants were in the dining room preparing the dinner and they were filing into the room and finally they all went in and left him there, and he did not go in but kept following me up. As I got near the door and took the key to unlock the door, he grabbed me and kept me down, holding me with his hands and jounced his knees across my chest. The attendants heard the noise and came there and we got hin into what we call the strong room—a room with heavy shutters over the windows designed for a person in a violent condition, with no bed in it; just a bare room. We had just got the door shut and got away from him when we heard a racket and the next minute down came the door. He had caught hold of the shutter which we supposed to be proof against any person, and jerked it off taking the casing of the window with it, and he took the shutter up and struck the door and out came the shutter and all into the hall, and then he sprang up and struck the outside door and knocked that down, but before he could recover from the effort to throw the shutter against the door the attendants caught him around the waist and we all laid hold of him and bound him.

Q. The strong room was broken down?

A. Yes, sir; the outside door was broken down, and there was nothing between him then and the hall and the outside of the building; that is all there was of that, but we had a severe struggle to get possession of him and get him bound, and in that time he got his face bruised.

Q. In that struggle it was where he got his face bruised?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Can you tell the committee the character of those bruises?

A. I cannot tell very distinctly; his face was bruised considerably; he struggled just like a wild wolf, and he paid no attention to hurting us or himself; he was in a perfect rage, and he would have killed us if there was any possible means that he could have done it, and we were as anxious to hold him as he was to get away.

Q. Now, passing over that, you heard the testimony of Miss Sisson about the washing; how about that? Are these patients ever required to wash?

A. It is perfectly voluntary, any work they do; we sometimes encourage them to go out, supposing it is for their benefit, but no one goes to the wash-house except those that choose to go there.

Q. How about the ironing?

A. It is the same with the ironing; it is the same with those that go to the sewing-room; there are generally more volunteer to go than we can make place for.

Q. If you think of any other matter or thing that you deem important to state, tell it?

A. I do not know as I do, but I would state this—that while we know these people will have violent spells, we anticipate it and know it will come sooner or later, the understanding is and a strict order in obedience to these by-laws is to be met with sufficient force to overcome the patient, and no more; that a kick or blow is perfectly inexcusable if given except in absolute self-defense, and if it comes to my knowledge it is my duty to discharge him.

Q. Have you uniformly done that?

A. I have always done that. There were some cases where I have been in doubt, but never where I was thoroughly satisfied that more force was used than was necessary to take care of the patient, I have not retained anybody in the service.

Q. How long have these rules that have been offered been in force in the Asylum?

A. They were in force when I came there, and have been ever since; I think they were there when the Asylum was first established, from the fact that they were copied from the Iowa by-laws, where the patients used to be kept before the Asylum was built.

Q. All these institutions have similar by-laws?

A. They are very similar.

Q. If there is any other thing in relation to the general management of the institution or general treatment of these patients that you desire to state, please state it?

A. I do not know that there is anything in peculiar in our treatment. We all have a little different way in doing things, the same as in the practice of medicine, but it is the universal demand of the community that these people should be treated as well as possible, and that I believe is as strictly carried out in this institution as in any institution in the United States. There are institutions where they have appurtenances for taking care of the patients, more complete than we have, but, of course, we have to do the best with what we have.

Q. Now, in relation to switching this man that was testified to. I alluded to it once, but I think it was passed over. Do you know anything about that?

A. No, sir; I never heard of it until the witness stated it here—at least the day before.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. How do you fix the time of the woman being at the window as the same time testified to by the colored man?

A. I fix it in this way: that she was talking at the window with the colored man, and the only time in my recollection that I was called upon to take her away from the window. I remember distinctly of the colored man being outside talking to her, and that is the reason of their calling me to keep her away from the window.

Q. Was the woman patient in the habit of going to the window?

A. Yes; if she could get a chance she would go to the window, and we hadn't paid much attention to it until after she had got out of the building. After that the instructions to the attendant were not to let her go to the window.

Q. You know nothing of her giving the colored man fifteen dollars?

A. No, sir; only as I have related it here.

Q. You say that Mr. Druse's statement about you is unqualifiedly false?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Which part of the statement?

A. The part in relation to the choking of the woman.

Q. Do you remember the date fixed by Mr. Druse when he charged that you did this choking?

A. No, sir; I don't deny it on that ground. I deny it from the fact that I never choked one, and I know that he never saw me do it because I never did it.

Q. How do you recall the circumstance of putting out your hand as you say, and the woman patient coming in contact with it?

A. I recall the circumstance in this way: that I went up into the hall—as I supposed the patients were all in bed—and this patient came out of the room with her night-dress on and made a spring for me.

Q. But how do you recognize that as the time testified to by Miss Sisson?

A. Because she stated that fact that she came out of the room with her night-dress on.

Q. Is it a fact that you told Miss Sisson and her companion not to interfere, but to let you take the patient?

A. I think I did. I think I said something to that effect.

Q. If they were in attendance and could have taken the patient and put her to bed, as Miss Sisson testified they could have done, why did you want to interfere with the patient?

A. I thought I would be quite as likely to get along with her with little trouble as if they took hold of her. Frequently, when they undertook to take her away, she would struggle until she would get hold of you and I thought that I could keep her up right and could keep her off and get clear of her with little trouble.

Q. It was distasteful for you to come in contact with this woman patient?

A. It was distasteful to me to have her get hold of me and cling to me.

Q. Do I understand you to say that you do not have control of the keys of the female wards?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who has charge of the keys?

A. The lady attendants of the ward and the night watch.

Q. No one else have the keys?

A. No, sir.

Q. How do you remember the circumstance Miss Sisson testifies that you came into the ward, and how do you remember the circumstance of the night watch being away that particular night?

A. I simply remember the fact that we had a sick patient there and the night watch was sick. The night watch was the cook's wife and she was sick, and whenever she was sick I called for her to leave the keys with me so that I could go in, because we were afraid she might die during the night

Q. Was that the only time before or up to that time that there had been sick patients in that ward?

A. No, sir.

Q. Was that the only time up to that time that you had gone into that ward at night?

A. Up to that time I think I never had, unless I was called by the night watch.

Q. The second case testified to by Miss Sisson, do you remember the circumstance of going into the ward as testified to by her?

A. I don't know as I remember the order in which she spoke of them, whether it was the case of the hysteria or the case of the women fighting.

Q. Do you remember how many times you went into the ward during the time Miss Sisson was there?

A. No, sir; but I remember when she related them. I had the keys all the time the night watch was sick, and didn't give them up until she was able to attend to her duty; but since she gave the circumstance I remember it occurred. I had occasion to go into the other wards frequently. There were three wards that she had the keys to, and more frequently on the third ward than on the second.

Q. In the case of Hedrick, after you learned of the difficulty with Hedrick, did you discharge the attendant?

A. No, sir.

Q. In the case of Ryma, where it was alleged that he was struck with the half of a brick-bat, did you hear of that circumstance at the time?

A. I did not hear that he was struck with a brick-bat. I heard that he had a brick in his hand.

Q. Did you hear of the difficulty?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How soon after it occurred did you hear of it?

A. I am not positive whether I heard of it that day or the next. I heard of it soon, I know, and saw him soon after.

Q. Was he bruised on the face?

A. Yes, his face was bruised some.

Q. You say Christner brought him in?

A. Yes, sir; or at least that was the way I understood it. I was not there at the time; that is the way I recollect it.

Q. Did you discharge Christner?

A. No, sir: as I understood the case, it was only what he was obliged to do in self-defense, to take care of him, and he had to catch him, and get possession of him in that manner.

Q. Did you inquire of witnesses or other parties as to whether Christner's story were true or not?

A. I am not positive in regard to that, whether I inquired of any one else or not. I examined the man and I saw that there was nothing serious in his injuries. He was a man that used to fall frequently in fits, and frequently had bruises, and it didn't strike me as being anything unusual, or anything remarkable in the case, and as the circumstances were related, I could not see that there was any ground for discharging him.

Q. But you did take Christner's simple statement for the fact?

A. I took his statement, but whether I had any positive evidence I could not state; I may have had. In such cases we take more the appearance of the man where he has trouble.

Q. You remember the Searle difficulty?

A. I knew nothing about that except as I saw the man the next day, and it was related to me next day; and it was related to me by Dr. Hay.

Q. Did Dr. Hay personally know what was done to Searle?

A. No, sir, I judge not; but he said he could see him, and saw when they overtook him they had a struggle, but to what extent he could not say, but the man had no appearance of being injured.

Q. Did you discharge the attendants in that case?

A. No, sir; however, I would say that one of them was discharged within a few days from that time, but I could locate no blame on him as related to that case.

Q. He was not discharged for anything that he did to Searle?

A. No, sir.

Q. How does it come, if the female patients voluntarily go to wash, how does it come that three or four of the female patients do washing and the others do not.

A. There were some persons that sooner wash than do anything else; they like to go out to the wash-house; they have other places where they choose to go; they perhaps liked to be with the ladies that do the washing, and others like to go to the sewing room, and they have their choice where to go; in that respect, their work is voluntary, and it is a concession on their part, and consequently they do just as they are a mind to about it.

Q. Who were the attendants that had the struggle with Mr. Lawson's brother?

A. I am not very positive now, who the attendant was, but think his name was Stetzel.

Q. Is he still in the Institution?

A. No, sir; there were different attendants on the ward while Mr. Lawson was there. He was there a year and a half, and the attendants changed quite frequently. There was a man there about that time by the name of Eastman, but he left about that time and whether he was there just at that time or not, I am not certain.

By Judge Mason:

Q. What is the custom, or practice, at the Insane Asylum, as to

investigations of trouble between attendants and patients when the matter is brought to your knowledge, or when you have knowledge of it?

A. The custom is, that if any trouble seems to be unavoidable, they are to inform us, if possible, and we go to the ward to do what seems to be the best. If they are forced to trouble that they cannot avoid, they are to do just as much and no more as it is necessary to take care of the patient, and then to inform us; and if any trouble occurs outside of the house, they are to inform us as soon as they come in of the character of the difficulty, so that we may investigate as closely as we can.

Q. After a difficulty has occurred, what is the rule or custom as to investigating the facts relating to it?

A. If we see the patient and there are no torn clothes, or bruises, or dirt on them, why we conclude that it must have been quite trifling; that in connection with the statement of the attendant and the patient, if they make any complaint, or any bruises, and if we have any fears of that kind we manage as soon as possible to have them bathe. We generally take that method of having them bathe, to see if they have any bruises on them, or anything of that sort.

Q. Do you remember that Lawson said, or testified that his brother didn't speak to him after his visit to him? What class of insanity, or what character of insanity, and what was his changed condition of tt?

A. I never discovered that there was any change at that time; no apparent change. When he first came into the Hospital he was regarded as a violent man and he was placed in a violent ward for six monihs. He was quite a violent man a great deal of the time; then he began to grow quiet and sort of stupid, and gradually went into that state and finally became perfectly stupid and almost had the appearance of an idiot; towards the last, he would take his food and lie in bed, and he just knew enough to eat: He was demented.

Q. How in respect to his speaking?

A. He never spoke in English, and he spoke very little.

Q. Did you notice any change in his talking soon after his brother saw him?

A. No, sir, we did not see any particular change; the change was very gradual, almost unobserved.

Questioned by Mr. Kendall:

Q. Was he what is known as a demented patient when he died?

A. Yes, sir.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Is it or is it not fact that this brother, the witness, requested the Insane Asylum to furnish a coffin to bury his brother in?

A. He was there several times just previous to the man's death, and said when he died he wished to take him away to bury him; when he died, I spoke to him through the telephone; he was at the gas-house, and I expected him out to get the remains, but I think he didn't come until the next day, and shortly before he came out he asked if the Hospital furnished the coffin; I told him it was the custom with people who took their friends away to bury them, to furnish their own coffin, and we had some little further explanation and words about it, and finally he brought the coffin out. The idea was to get rid of buying the coffin, if possible.

Q. Was Dr. Hay there at the time this man Lawson was sick and died?

A. Yes, sir; he was there during his sickness; he was the physician.

(Signed) H. P. MATHEWSON.

Testimony of R. C. Christner.

R. C. Christner, sworn.

Examined by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your occupation?

A. Attendant on the second ward of the Insane Asylum.

Q. How long have you been an attendant?
A. Since the 13th September, '81.

Q. Do you remember the incident of the patient at the mortar-box?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. State the facts in relation to that matter?
A. Mr. Hedrick was the patient; he went to the mortar-box and took a hoe and commenced to mix mortar; I approached him and took him by the arm; he dropped the hoe and I told him to go into the yard; he turned and struck at me, and then Mr. Burns came up and took him by the back and assisted me in getting him in the yard. We then threw him and held him for about a minute, then we let him up.

Q. Well, how about striking him?
A. We didn't strike him, or kick him, or choke him.

Q. Neither of you?
A. No, sir, neither of us, to my recollection; I didn't see any person strike him, or kick him, or choke him.

Q. Who were the attendants who were there?
A. Mr. Burns was there, and Mr. Slatterly was present, but he didn't assist.

Q. Where is Burns now?
A. He left some time ago, but I don't know where he went to.

Q. Where is Slatterly?
A. I don't know where he went.

Q. What did you say or do to the patient that made him strike at you?
A. I asked him to go into the yard and I took hold of his shoulder, and told him he was not in the right place; I think that is all I said to him.

Q. What did he say about getting a drink?
A. I don't think he said anything about getting a drink; there was not any water near where he was; the water was at the other side.

Q. Did you kick or strike this patient?
A. No, sir, I did not.

Q. Did you see Slatterly kick or slap the patient?
A. No, sir; Slatterly did not kick or strike him to my knowledge.

Q. Did you see Burns kick or strike him?
A. No, sir.

Q. Was he kicked or struck?
A. No, sir; I didn't see him kicked or struck.

Q. Did either of you stamp on him when he was down?
A. No, sir.

Q. What did you throw him down for?
A. Well, he resisted when I took him to the yard, and we had to throw him down; he made great resistance when we got him to the yard.

Q. Was he a strong man?
A. He was strong.

Q. What happened after you let him up?
A. Well, he went into the yard.

Q. Did anything further occur?
A. No, sir, nothing further.

Q. Were you present when the difficulty occurred with Ryma?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You know this patient Ryma?
A. Yes, sir, I do.

Q. Were you present when there was a brickbat used by some one?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. State the facts about that?
A. Well, when they called all into the ward, Mr. Ryma refused to go, and I took him by the shoulder and went to lead him in, and I led him a few rods and he went himself, and when he came to where the bricks were, he took a brick and turned

round to strike me and swore at me, and I clinched him and threw him down.

Q. In what position did he have the brick ?

A. He had the brick in his hand, and he held the brick up this way (illustrating by holding hand above the head in attitude of striking), already to throw at me, and before he had a chance to throw at me, I clinched him.

Q. What did he say?

A. I don't recollect the language he used. I clinched him and threw him down, and then his attendants took him to his ward—to the third ward; that is all I know about him.

Q. Did you strike that man with a brickbat?

A. No, sir, I did not.

Q. Did any attendant strike him with a brickbat?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did either of the attendants have a brickbat?

A. No, sir; no one but Ryma had a brickbat.

Q. Did any one offer to use a brickbat but Ryma?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now, can you fix about the time of that occurrence?

A. I cannot; no, sir.

Q. Whereabouts was it?

A. Right close to the building—about a rod from the entrance door.

Q. Which door ?

A. The bottom door at the north end—the basement door.

Q. Do you remember a patient by the name of Searle?

A. I do.

Q. Do you remember of his being pursued one day?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. State the facts in relation to that matter, what occurred and what was done?

A. That was on Sunday morning, we were out in the yard

for exercise. Mr. Searle started to run off, and Mr. Merrill and Mr. Mansfield and myself started after him. Mr. Merrill and Mr. Mansfield overtook him at the railroad. I was about four rods behind. Mr. Searle took up a lump of what I thought was clay and showed fight. Mr. Merrill and Mansfield took hold of him and were bringing him back, and when they got a few rods from the railroad, he made a terrible resistance. I then arrived at the spot and took hold of him and threw him down.

Q. What else did you do?
A. That is all.

Q. Did you kick him?
A. No, sir, we did not.

Q. Did any one of the attendants kick him?
A. I didn't see any person strike him or kick him.

Q. How about the blood on his face?
A. He said himself that he got the blood on his face by getting through a barb wire fence. We had to cross a barb wire fence.

Q. Did you cross this barb wire fence in your pursuit?
A. I did, yes, sir.

Q. And when you overtook him was his face bloody?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And cut?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Whereabouts hid he seem to be hurt?
A. I think it was somewhere on the cheek. I remember seeing the blood on his cheek when we caught him.

Q. Did you cross the creek on your return with the patient?
A. We did. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you stop at the creek and wash the blood off his face?
A. I think not. No, sir.

Q. You think you did not?
A. No, sir, we did not.

Q. In returning with the patient, which one of you struck him or kicked him?

A. There was not any one of us struck him that I recollect, or kicked him.

Q. Was he bruised or injured in any manner, except this hurt by the wire hurt?

A. No, sir.

Q. This you say was on Sunday morning?

A. On Sunday.

Q. Which way was he escaping from the Asylum?

A. Almost north from the Asylum, towards town, and he got right on the railroad.

Q. Did Mr. Nelson come over there on a horse?

A. No, sir.

Q. Who did come?

A. Mr. Lennon and Mr. Nelson's son.

Q. They came over on horseback?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Had you overtaken and stopped the patient before they arrived?

A. I think so; I am not positive; I think we had.

Q. Do you remember a patient by the name of Dietrick Myers?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember of his getting his ribs hurt one day?

A. No, sir.

Q. It was J. C. Parks, I believe?

A. Yes, I remember that case.

Q. You remember of J. C. Parks being hurt?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you present at the time?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. State the facts all about that?

A. They were in the yard for exercise, and Mr. Parks was wandering out. And I took him by the shoulder and was bringing him back, and he turned on me and struck at me twice.

Q. How did he strike?

A. With his fist, and he struck at me twice, and Mr. Gilbert, the attendant, was present, and he took him and assisted in getting him into the yard, and when we got him into the yard, he made a terrible resistance, and we had to throw him down. We had a struggle with him, and we threw him down, and Mr. Myers, Dietrick Myers, came up and kicked him, and Aleck Bremer, another patient, was there and we thought he kicked him too.

Q. Who was Dietrick Myers?

A. He was a patient.

Q. Who was this other man you mentioned?

A. Aleck Bremer? He was a patient too.

Q. Why did you let this patient come to him?

A. We could not help ourselves. We were in a struggle with Parks, and the patients were there and they came to our assistance, and as soon as Mr. Parks was quiet we quieted the patients.

Q. Couldn't you stop those patients?

A. No, sir. There were three patients and only two attendants.

Q. Who was the other attendant?

A. Mr. Gilbert.

Q. Did you or Gilbert strike him?

A. No, sir, we did not.

Q. Did you kick him?

A. No, sir.

Q. What did you do with the patient after that?

A. Dr. Hay and I took him to the ward.

Q. How soon did Dr. Hay get there?

A. He came before we got through with our struggle.

Q. Where is Dr. Hay?
A. I don't know, but I suppose he is at the Asylum.

Q. Were you out at the time Mr. Nelson switched some patients for falling behind in the rear?
A. No, sir, I do not. I don't know any thing about that.

Q. Is there any act that you remember of having a struggle with this patient?
A. We had some trouble with Mr. Palmer once, but I have not a distinct recollection of what occurred on that day.

Q. Who had this trouble?
A. I don't recollect all the parties, I was implicated, he would not keep his slippers on.

Q. This was in the ward?
A. No, sir, this was in the yard.
A. We were out in the yard for exercise and the ground was wet, and he would'ent keep his slippers on and we went up to him. I don't know whether it was me or another attendant and told him to keep his slippers on.

Q. What occurred?
A. I don't recollect what occurred exactly, but we had considerable trouble and we took him to the ward.

Q. Did you throw him down?
A. I don't recollect of throwing him down.

Q. Did you ever see a circumstance of this kind—of a patient being thrown down and then being ended over?
A. No, sir, I never did.

Q. Did you ever see anything of that kind?
A. No, sir.

Q. Are the attendants allowed to kick or strike the patients there?
A. No, sir, it is strictly forbidden.

Q. What is done when they do?
A. We expect a discharge when we strike or kick one.

Q. Is this rule made universal on all attendants?
A. Yes, I think so.

Q. State whether that is understood to be the rule on all attendants, or whether that is just smooth talk as has been stated
A. I was cautioned frequently as to being kind to the patients, and to never kick or strike them.

Q. How long have you been there?
A. Since the 13th of September '81, or about seventeen months.

Q. Whenever it has been brought to the knowledge of the Doctor that the attendant kicks or strikes a patient, what does he do?
A. He discharges them.

Q. Have you known them to be discharged for this cause?
A. I think so.

Q. Do you know so?
A. Yes, sir, I have thought so.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. What was Hedrick doing when he was at the mortar box?
A. He was mixing mortar.

Q. With what?
A. With a hoe.

Q. Did you consider that out of the way?
A. Yes, sir, I did.

Q. When you undertook to lead him away, did he resist?
A. He did. Yes, sir.

Q. What did he say to you?
A. He said he would not go, and he struck at me twice.

Q. Did'ent he say "Let me alone, I am doing no harm?"
A. I don't think he did.

Q. Would you swear that he did'ent say that?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How did he strike at you?
A. He struck at me with his fist with his hand shut.

Q. How near were you to him?
A. I was close to him, probably within two feet.

Q. Did he hit you?
A. No, sir, he did not.

Q. What did you do next?
A. Took him by the shoulder and was going to lead him along, and Mr. Burns grabbed him from behind.

Q. Did you ask Mr. Burns to grab him?
A. No, sir, I did not.

Q. How did it come that Burns was there ready to grab him?
A. Because there is always, or nearly always, two attendants on that corner near the building.

Q. Had you put your own hand on the patient when Burns stepped up and grabbed him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did Burns do immediately after grabbing him, what was the next thing done?
A. He assisted me in taking him to the yard.

Q. What do you mean by "the yard?"
A. There are certain limits where we keep the patients; there is no fence but there is a limit where we keep the patients when they are out for exercise.

Q. And you caught him over there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you holding him by the arm?
A. I dont recollect whether I kept hold of his arm all the time, but Mr. Burns had hold of him.

Q. But he went over and you caught him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you threw him down?
A. Yes, sir, because he made a terrible resistance, and we had to.

Q. How did it come that he made a resistance right there?

A. I don't know why he made the resistance, but suppose it was because he was so inclined.

Q. Who threw him down?

A. Mr. Burns and I.

Q. How did you throw him down?

A. Mr. Burns had him from behind and pulled him backwards.

Q. How did he fall?

A. He fell very easy, very gently.

Q. Full length or just partly down?

A. Just partly down.

Q. Did you ever get him clear down?

A. I do not know that we did.

Q. Do you think you ever did?

A. I could not say whether we did or not. I could not say whether his head touched the ground or not, but his shoulders may have touched.

Q. How long did you hold him down?

A. Probably a minute; I do not think any longer than a minute.

Q. What was done then? Did you both let go of him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did he do?

A. He got up and walked off into the yard.

Q. Whereabouts in the yard did he walk to?

A. He walked toward the center.

Q. What became of him?

A. He went with the rest of the patients until we went into the hall.

Q. Do you swear here that neither you nor Burns kicked that man?

A. I do; yes, sir.

Q. You do?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember of seeing any persons present on that occasion, and near by?
A. I do not recollect who was present at the time.

Q. Do you remember of seeing any persons present or near by?
A. Yes, sir; there were some persons present.

Q. What were those persons doing?
A. There was one man mixing mortar or plaster.

Q. Do you remember whether they were colored or white men?
A. I think they were white men.

Q. Do you remember seeing any colored men on that occasion, as you remember it now?
A. No, sir; I do not recollect of seeing any colored men.

Q. You never kicked him?
A. No, sir.

Q. And never struck him?
A. No, sir.

Q. And never choked him?
A. No, sir.

Q. And did nothing but let him down easy?
A. That is all.

Q. Now, sir, if he was struggling violently when he was up, why didn't he continue to struggle when he was down?
A. Mr. Burns held one arm and I the other, and Mr. Burns was a straddle of him.

Q. Did he sit on him?
A. No, I do not think he sat on him; I think he was a straddle of about his breast.

Q. What was your position when Burns was a straddle of him?
A. I was on one side a hold of his arm.

Q. Did Mr. Burns have a coat on?
A. I do not know.

Q. You do not know that he sat upon the patient?
A. I do not think he sat upon him; I did not see him.

Q. Did you see him a straddle of his breast?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you holding one or both arms when Burns was a straddle of his breast?
A. I was holding his left arm.

Q. What was the patient doing with his right arm?
A. He was doing nothing; Mr Burns was holding it.

Q. He was straddle of him and holding his right arm.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How did he have his arm? how was he holding it?
A. He was holding it on the ground.

Q. Was he leaning over in this way and holding his arm or sittimg up straight and holding?
A. I do not recollect his position.

Q. Was the arm out at full length?
A. Yes, I think it was.

Q. Then he must necessarily have leaned clear over to hold it?
A. He may have leaned over a little.

Q. Do you remember of some one saying to you upon that occasion, asking you "are you going to kill the patient; are you going to kill this man?
A. No, sir; I do not.

Q. Do you remember of any one speaking to you?
A. Yes, sir; the plasterers spoke to us, but I don't know what they said; I think spoke in German.

Q. How far off were you from the plasterers?
A. I should think about ten or fifteen feet.

Q. You heard them speak?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know what they said?
A. No, sir; I do not know.

Q. Was their language addressed to you?
A. I do not know to whom their language was addressed.

Q. Did you think it was at that time?
A. I do not know what I thought about it.

Q. Did you or Mr. Burns start in the direction of this man who spoke to you in a threatening manner?
A. I do not know that he did; I stepped toward him and asked him what he said, and he didn't make any answer.

Q. Don't you know that either you or Mr. Burns threatened that man right there?
A. I did not; no sir.

Q. Don't you know that Mr. Burns did?
A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know that he did not?
A. I do not know that Mr. Burns spoke a word; I didn't hear him speak at all.

Q. Did you report this case to Dr. Mathewson?
A. I reported to Dr. Hay; I think so.

Q. When did you make report that to Dr. Hay?
A. After we went in.

Q. Where was Dr. Hay at this time?
A. I do not know, I am sure.

Q. What did you tell Dr. Hay?
A. I told him we had had trouble with Hedrick.

Q. Did you tell him that you took him down?
A. I do not recollect what we told him, I am sure.

Q. Where is Hedrick now?
A. I do not know.

Q. How long has he been discharged?
A. I don't know that.

Q. Is he discharged?
A. I don't know.

Q. Don't you know whether he is in the Asylum?

A. I do not know; he is not on my ward and I do not know who are on the other wards.

Q. Do you pretend to say that you don't know whether Hedrick was discharged or not?

A. I do not know.

Q. Do you know what was the nature of his insanity?

A. No, sir; I do not; but I know that he was a violent patient.

Q. Is this the only difficulty that you ever had with him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You say you remember the circumstance of the difficulty with Ryma?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Just commence at the first of that and tell what that difficulty was, how it occurred, and when it occurred?

A. When we called the men all into the wards, he refused to come.

Q. Were they out doors?

A. They were out in the yard for exercise, and we called them into the wards, and he wouldn't come. I took hold of him—of his shoulder—and pulled him along for a few rods and then he went himself until he came to the brick pile and he grabbed a brick from the pile and showed fight.

Q. How far were you from him when he grabbed this brick?

A. Oh, just a few feet. May be ten or fifteen feet.

Q. Was he in advance of you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What kind of a brick was it that he grabbed up?

A. Just a common brick.

Q. A full brick?

A. Yes, sir, a full brick.

Q. You are sure of that?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did he do with the brick?

A. He took a brick from the pile and drew it up in this way to strike me, (with hand drawn back above the head) and I clinched him and threw him down.

Q. Did he still have the brick in his hand when you clinched him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he still have the brick in his hand when you threw him down?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he strike you?

A. No, sir.

Q. Where did you grab him?

A. Around the waist. When he had his arm up, I grabbed him under the arm.

Q. Where were you, at the back or side?

A. I think I was in front of him.

Q. And he never struck you?

A. No, sir.

Q. When you threw him down, did he let go of the brick or did he still hold it in his hand?

A. I do not recollect.

Q. You got him fairly down, did you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long did you hold him down?

A. I didn't hold him at all.

Q. What did you do?

A. I left him and his attendants took him to his own ward.

Q. You got up and left him there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. With the brick in his hand?

A. I don't know whether he had the brick in his hand.

Q. You were afraid at first that he would hit you with the brick?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You say his attendants came and took him to his ward. Who were his attendants?

A. Mr. Burns and Mr. Jordan.

Q. How did they take him to his ward?

A. I don't recollect, but they took him with the rest of the men.

Q. They turned him in with the rest of the men and he went off?

A. I suppose that was the way.

Don't you know as a matter of fact that they carried that man into the ward at that time?

A. No, sir, I do not.

Q. You do not know that?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you say that you never struck that man with a brick?

A. I do.

Q. Do you say that no one else struck him with a brick?

A. I didn't see any one else strike him.

Q. Could any one else strike him and you not know it?

A. I do not think so. I was there until they put him inside the door.

Q. You are sure he walked into the Asylum?

A. I am not sure that he walked in or not.

Q. You are not sure whether he walked or not?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you remember seeing some employees and workmen around the building at that time?

A. Yes, I recollect seeing two men—no, sir, I do not.

Q. Do you remember of any one saying any thing to you at that time?

A. No, sir; I don't think any person spoke to me.

Q. Did any person say you are not going to kill that man, are you, or words to that effect?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see two colored men there at that time?
A. No, sir, I did not. At least I did not recollect of seeing any colored men.

Q. In the case of Searle, Mansfield and Merrill reached Searle before you did?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. About how far had Searle got from the Asylum before they overtook him.
A. To the railroad.

Q. About how far is that?
A. I suppose it is a half mile or three-quarters of a mile. I do not know exactly.

Q. So you were not there when they caught him?
A. I was a few rods behind—four or five rods.

Q. Did you see all that transpired?
A. I think so.

Q. Who caught him first?
A. Mr. Mansfield.

Q. What was done immediately upon catching the patient?
A. Mr. Searle, the patient, picked up a lump of clay and attempted to strike Mr. Mansfield, and Mr. Mansfield, I think, clinched him, and then Mr. Merrill was there, and one on each side was bringing him back, and when they got a few rods from the railroad he made a terrible resistance.

Q. In what way?
A. Well, he showed fight, and struck and kicked and tried to get away.

Q. There was one on each side of him?
A. Yes, sir, I think there was.

Q. But they held on, did they?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. They did throw him down did they?
A. Well, we between us threw him down. I had arrived there at that time, and I clinched him and we threw him down.

Q. All three of you threw him down?
A. Yes, I suppose.

Q. After you got him down, is it not a fact that some one of you three took out a handkerchief and put it around his neck?
A. No, sir, it is not.

Q. Could such a thing as that have been done without your seeing it?
A. No, sir; I don't think so. At that time I was exhausted and I had a pocket handkerchief in my hand wiping the sweat from my face.

Q. Do you say there was no handkechief or other bandage of any kind put around Mr. Searle's neck?
A. I didn't see any; no, sir.

Q. It could not have been done without your seeing it?
A. No, sir.

Q. Do you say that he was not kicked ?
A. He was not.

Q. Was he struck?
A. No, sir.
Q. What else was done to him besides holding him down on the ground?

A. We held him there for probably a minute. and when he asked us to let him up we let him up, and he said if we would let him up he would go home all right, and we let him up.

Q. Was Mr. Searle much demented—much out of his mind?
A. I think he was; yes, sir.

Q. You think he was considerably out of his mind?
A. I do.

Q. And you held him down until he said if you would let him up he would go home?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You remember crossing a little creek between where you captured Searle and the Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you say you didn't stop in that creek and wash the blood from his face?
A. We did not, no sir.

Q. How did Searle get home; did you lead him?
A. No, sir; he walked home himself; sometimes we had hold of him and sometimes we did not.

Q. But he went home willingly?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And he didn't show any fight after that?
A. No, sir; we had no trouble with him after that.

Q. Mr. Peterson has testified here, that he sat upon his pony near by where this occurred; do you remember of seeing him?
A. Mr. Peterson? I don't know a man by that name.

Q. I mean Daniel Nelson.
A. I think he was there, yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember of seeing him?
A. I do; yes, sir.

Q. He has testified that you, or some of you, put a handkerchief around this man's neck and choked him; do you say that he is mistaken?
A. I do; yes, sir.

Q. You say that nothing of that kind was done?
A. There was nothing of that kind done; I had a pocket-handkerchief in my hand, the same as I have now.

Q. But I am talking about the choking?
A. We did not choke him.

Q. He also testifies that you kicked him and struck him?
A. We did not kick him or strike him.

Q. Did you report to Dr. Mathewson when you got home?
A. We reported to Dr. Hay; Dr. Hay was in the yard when we arrived with the patient.

Q. Is it not a fact that Mr. Lennon, when he came up to you said: "Let him alone, boys; don't punish him any more?"
A. I don't recollect what Mr. Lennon said.

Q. And didn't you say that you knew your business?
A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. Do you remember of Mr. Lennon saying something to you?
A. I don't recollect of him speaking to us.

Q. Well, he was by, within full view of this transaction?
A. I think he came there while we were having the trouble.

Q. In the case of Parks, you say it was the patient who kicked him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did they break his ribs?
A. I do not know.

Q. Has he been confined to his bed?
A. I do not know.

Q. You know they kicked him?
A. Yes; I saw Deidrich Myers kick him.

Q. Didn't you inquire afterwards as to condition of him?
A. Yes; I heard that he was hurt and that his ribs were broken, but I do not know for certain.

Q. It was the general understanding that it was so?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, you say you saw Aleck Bremer kick him, also?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Are you certain about that?

A. No, sir; I am not certain whether he kicked him or not; but he was there and attempted to help us. I heard some of the boys say that he kicked him.

Q. You thought he was liable to kick him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. But you don't know whether he kicked him?
A. I thought he kicked him; I think I saw him kick him, but I am not positive whether he hit him.

Q. Now, in the Palmer case; you don't know anything about it?
A. No, sir; I don't recollect distinctly about that.

Q. How long ago has that been?
A. It was some time in the fall.

Q. Of this year?
A. No, sir; I think it was in '82.

Q. Was that after or before the Searle case?
A. I don't recollect; I think it was after, though.

Q. Then how does it come that you remember the facts of the Searle case, and yet don't remember the facts of the Palmer case?
A. In the case with Mr. Searle, it was the first day I had been out after being sick. I had the fever, and that was the first day I had been out on duty after being sick.

Q. That is the way you account for it?
A. I suppose that is the way I remember it; I have no other reason.

Q. Does Dr. Mathewson always discharge attendants where notice is brought home to him of mistreating the patients?
A. I think he does; yes, sir.

Q. Is that just your guess, or have you any knowledge of that fact?
A. Well, the Superintendent has told me that he would discharge any man who abused a patient; that would kick, or strike, or choke him.

I hereby certify the above to be a correct transcript of my testimony, given before the committee investigating the charges against the Nebraska State Insane Asylum.

[Signed.] R. C. CHRISTNER.

TESTIMONY OF C. B. KELLIHER.

C. B. Kelliher sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your occupation?

A. I was hired as gardner.

Q. At the Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Give me your age.
A. Twenty-four.

Q. Did you see the occurrence at the mortar box at the Asylum with a patient?
A. Yes, sir, I saw part of it; I guess all of it.

Q. State the facts. What was the patient's name?
A. Hedrick, I think.

Q. State the facts in relation to that matter.
A. Well, I was passing by as the wards were all out walking. I was passing by the ground, and I stopped a minute, I think, and spoke to Mr. Christner, and Mr. Hedrick was standing at the mortar box, talking, I think, with a hoe in his hand, and Mr. Christner noticed him being there and hollered to him to come along out of that, and the fellow did'ent come and Mr. Christner stepped around to the other side of the mortar box and put his hand on his shoulder and said to come along here, and he did'ent go, and he took hold of his shoulder and the man turned around and struck at him, and they clinched, and Mr. Burns came along

and assisted, and they took him along on the ground, and he tried to get away from him and scuffled with him considerbly, and I think they downed him and held him there for a few minutes probably a minute and a half or a minute, say, but so far as choking or striking, I dou't think there was any thing of that kind done; in fact I did,nt see it.

Q. How about the kicking?
A. I did'ent see anybody kick him.

Q, Did anybody get on his breast with their knees or sit down upon him?
A. They had him down and they held him down on the ground, and they said something, but I do not know what they said to him, and my attention was drawn to the crowd. The wards were all out, and there were probably a hundred and fifty men there together, and this seemed to be among them, and my attention was drawn to the croud.

Q. Did you see either of these attendants strike him?
A. No, sir, I did not.

Q. Did you see either of them choke him?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see either of them kick him?
A. No, sir.

Q. When Christner spoke to the patient at the mortar box, did he speak kindly to him?
A. He spoke kindly to him. He says, come along here, just that way, to him before he went to him, and the fellow paid no attention to it, and then Mr. Christner walked around the mortar box and put his hand on his shoulder and says come along here. He was kind of making one side of the crowd like, and Searles whirled around and looked at him and Christner started him along on a walk, and Searles whirled around and struck at him. He wanted to fight right there.

Q. Did you know a patient there by the name of Palmer?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you see the trouble with Palmer?

A. I saw a part of it. I was walking by and they were coming out of the wards.

Q. State what you saw.

A. Well, the first I saw of it was, the second ward had just gone out and Mr. Palmer was the last patient going out and Mr. Christner had hold of him helping him out as I suppose to get some fresh air. Palmer would twist himself and bend himself in all shapes, and I said that he was off again, and he would kick his slippers off and Christner would hold 'em up. I expect he would have fallen on the ground if he had'ent, and he would lead him to the slippers and would put them on again, and in that way he got him into the yard; and after he got him into the yard he commenced kicking and scuffling with him, and after, he got his slippers on he would kick them off, and they downed him and held him. They held him there and then they let him up, and then I think he stood up a minute and commenced kicking his slippers again and throwed them up, and Mr. Christner took him back into the hall.

Q. Who was the other attendant beside Mr. Christner?

A. Mr. Burns.

Q. Did they kick or strike Palmer?

A. No, sir; I do not think they did.

Q. Did you see them kick him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or strike him?

A. No, sir.

Q. State how Palmer and this man were. Was Palmer laughing all the time?

A. Palmer was acting different from any time I saw him before. He was generally a quiet sort of a fellow when he was not having his fits.

Q. How was he acting on that day?

A. He acted just as though he was as crazy as he could be, he was just laughing and loose as a drunken man would be,

and at the same time he was using a great deal of strength in pushing and shoving.

Q. You did not see any body kick him?
A. No, sir; I do not think they did any thing of that kind, because if it had been done I would have noticed it, I think.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. How long have you been at the Asylum?
A. I commenced there March, 1, '82, and worked there by the month until the first of September.

Q. Had you been there continuously?
A. I have been there three days a week since the first of September.

Q. Did this occurrence take place previous to September or subsequent?
A. The Hedrick case was in August and the Palmer case, I think, was in October.

Q. Now, you say that Hedrick struck at Christner?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And then Christner Clinched him?
A. He clinched him as soon as he could.

Q. How did he clinch him?
A. I think he grabbed him the first place he could get hold of him. I think it was right around the body. He wanted to hold his arms and he had'ent much more than got hold of him before Burns came up.

Q. While he had him around the body, was the patient Hedrick striking at him or anything of that kind?
A. Well, he was striking and pushing all he could.

Q. And then Burns came right up?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Where did Burns catch him?
A. By the arms; one on each side of him I think.

Q. They led him off to the other ground?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, then, you say there were a great many patients out there that day?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And your attention was attracted by that fact?
A. Yes, sir; there were probably 150 men; I was not in the habit of passing when they were all out.

Q. Might not these parties have kicked him and you not seen it?
A. I don't think they could.

Q. Still your attention was attracted a good deal?
A. It was attracted some; I would look over at those fellows occasionally; they were not at it more than a minute, I don't think.

Q. A kick could be inflicted very rapidly or very quickly?
A. Yes, sir; it could be, but I didn't notice.

Q. But what you mean to testify to is, that you didn't see it?
A. I didn't see it.

Q. And they might have struck him and you not see it?
A. Well, there could not be much of that done or I would have noticed it, because it was such a short time.

Q. There could be some of it done?
A. I could not say; I do not think there was.

Q. And what you mean to say is that you did not see any of that done there that day?
A. Yes, these men held him down, and there was some bystanders there, mixing mortar, and one or two passed a word that they were giving it to that fellow, and I said not very bad, and they thought he was abusing him, and as soon as they got through with him they let him up and he walked off into the yard; I saw him there a day or so after that, and I didn't see any marks or bruises on him.

Q. You never looked to examine whether there was?
A. No, sir; I just saw the man occasionally on the wards and on the grounds?

Q. Was your attention called to that fact whether there were any bruises on him or not?

A. I came back by the grounds in about ten or fifteen minutes, and I saw the man walking when I saw him.

Q. Did you look to see if he was bruised or not?

A. I noticed him.

Q. Was your attention called to it by what had occurred?

A. I looked at him in this way; I didn't see anything the matter with him.

Q. How did you account for looking at him if you were satisfied that they didn't kick him or didn't hurt him? What would call your attention to look at him to see if he was bruised?

A. I heard about that man showing a good deal of blood on his face.

Q. You hadn't heard of it before that time?

A. No, sir; but since that time; but they had the patient down there, and one fellow says they are giving it to that fellow pretty hard. I could not see they were doing anything to him.

Q. And that is the circumstance that called your attention to look at him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, in the case of Palmer, I believe you stated that you didn't see them get Palmer down at all?

A. Yes, I saw them get him down, I think.

Q. How long did they have Palmer down?

A. Probably a minute.

Q. What did they get him down for?

A. Well, he was pushing, and kicking, and striking, and wouldn't keep his slippers on at all, and they would have to put him down to put his slippers on.

Q. But you do not know what t ey got him down for?

A. No, sir; I do not.

Q. What did they do when they got him down?

A. They just seemed to hold him there. I suppose they spoke to one another, what will we do with him?

Q. Did they sit on him?
A. I do not know.

Q. You could not tell what they did do?
A. No, sir; I could not tell because I was off a little piece, but I know I just saw them holding him there.

Q. They might have sat down upon him?
A. They were bent over on him.

By Judge Mason:

Q. How near were you to them in the first case you have mentioned in the Hedrick case?
A. I was within ten feet when it commenced, and before it ended I was twenty-five to thirty feet.

[Signed.] C. B. KELLIHER.

TESTIMONY OF O. L. ANDERSON.

O. L. Anderson, sworn,

By Judge Mason:

Q. What is your occupation?
A. I am attendant in the Asylum.

Q. You have been attendant in other asylums?
A. I have.

Q. For how many years?
A. I cannot tell just the exact time.

Q. In what asylums?
A. I was an attendant at two different times at the Dixmont Asylum, located near Pittsburgh, Penn.; I was there two months the first time, and fourteen months the last time.

Q. What other asylums?
A. The Danville, Penn.

Q. How long?
A. I don't remember the exact time.

Q. What year were you in this Pittsburgh Asylum?
A. I cannot tell just exactly; I went there I think in '79; that is, the last time.

Q. What other asylum have you been in?
A. At Danville, Penn.

Q. How long were you there?
A. I think about eight months; that was in 1875.

Q. What other asylum?
A. The Newbergh Asylum, of Cleveland, Ohio.

Q. How long were you there?
A. I went there, I believe, the fifteenth day of March, '82, and remained until the 22nd July.

Q. When did you come to this Asylum?
A. I came to this Asylum the 29th of December, '82. I am in the first male ward, convalescent.

Q. What position did you hold in these other asylums, attendant?
A. A part of the time, and a part of the time I was assistant supervisor, and part of the time had a gang of men out on the farm gathering fruits and cultivating vegetables.

Q. Now, you have observed the treatment these patients in those asylums received from their attendants and others?
A. As far as the treatment from attendants is concerned, I have seen but little of that. I am alone in the ward. I have never seen them receive any ill treatment.

Q. How does their treatment compare with that in other institutions?
A. So far as I have seen, the treatment by the officers and attendants is better than I have seen elsewhere.

Q. Were you ever hurt in an asylum?
A. I was.

Q. These patients are better treated, more kindly treated than in other asylums?

A. Well, in one way; when the superintendent or his medical assistant goes into the ward, they converse more freely with the patients and treat them more as their equals, and they frequently go to the doors of the wards and invite the patients out to sit in the reception rooms, and officers take them out sleigh riding and carriage driving. I have seen that quite frequently which I have not seen in any other asylum; and I have seen another thing and I think it is pretty conclusive—they speak more highly of the officers than I have ever heard them speak in other asylums, and I think they are pretty nearly of the same class of men all through. I cannot think that they have any more love for the officers here than in other places, except it is for the better treatment they receive.

By Senator Connor:

Q. You have been in the asylum for how long?
A. Since the 29th day of December last.

Q. That would be a very short time in which to judge of the treatment of patients and the management of an institntion of this kind?
A. I was not speaking particularly of the management of the institution.

Q. But forty days would be a very short time?
A. That would be a little short to judge of the management of the institution, but I think forty days is sufficient to judge of the treatment of the patients when I am with them all the time from six o'clock in the morning till time to retire at night.

Signed) O. L. ANDERSON.

Adjourned.

Testimony of Mrs. Annie Hoffman.

Thursday Evening, Feb. 15, 1882.

Mrs. Annie Hoffman sworn.

Questioned by Mr. Connor:

Q. You may state your name?
A. Annie Hoffman.

Q. State your age?
A. Forty years.

Q. Place of residence?
A. Lincoln, Nebraska.

Q. Do you know of any acts of neglect or cruelty occurring at the Nebraska Iusane Asylum? If so, you may detail, that is, state what acts you know of.

A. Well, I have not seen any cruel treatment going on only the marks that showed on my husband.

Q. State the facts about your husband being there, and how long he was there?

A. He was taken out the 20th March, '79, and we brought him home the 22nd of May, the same year.

Q. State his condition physically at the time that you took him to the Asylum, in a general way?

A. Well, he took sick the year before.

Q. State what his condition was when you took him there. How was his bodily health?

A. He was not very healthy at the time we took him there. I did not think he was.

Q. State if he had any wounds or marks of wounds upon his face or body?

A. No, sir, not when we took him there.

Q. State how long he was there?
A. He was there two months and two days.

Q. State his condition when you took him from the Asylum?

A. He was in very poor condition when we brought him home.

Q. Go right on and tell.

A. Dr. Mathewson sent for me on the 21st of May, to come out there, that my husband was on the point of death. Mr. and Mrs. Jo. Hoagland took me out there about four o'clock on that day, and Dr. Mathewson himself took us in the room, and Mr. Hoagland said who hurted that man?; and he looked at him. Dr. Mathewson said he could give no account for it; and then we asked him who hurt him, and he could not speak. He showed to his mouth that he wanted a drink of water, and Dr. Mathewson himself went and got some water, and Mrs. Hoagland gave him a drink of water, and he drank nearly a pitcher full of water before he got enough. After he drank the water he began to speak, and we asked him if he could tell who hurt him, and he said no, and sir, a short time afterwards the nurse came in and he called him the barber, and I asked the barber who hurt him, and he said he could'ent give no account for it; and so they left me alone there about half an hour until Mr. and Mrs. Hoagland went home and I stayed out there, It was too late to bring him out that evening, and I stayed out all night. He asked me if I had anything and I said I had not brought anything, and he seemed to be very hungry, and a short time before supper time they brought in some beef-tea and some toast, and I am not quite sure, but I think they brought him some fruit and he ate of it; and then Dr. Mathewson came in again and he spoke very kind to him and asked me if I wanted any supper and I told him no, I did'ent wish any, and so I did not go to supper. Afterwards, I think it must have been about eight or nine o'clock, the other patients went to bed, and I sat up till about twelve o'clock; I think it must have been about twelve o'clock, and the night watchman came. The light was burning in the room and he seemed kind of astonished at finding me out there as he did'ent know I was there, and I said "Yes," and I asked who watched my husband nights he was so sick, and he said often he came around and gave him a drink, and I said that was not the way; he was laying here all day and had'ent a drink of water and I thought it was

cruel for him to be there all alone, locked up in a room without any body seeing to him, because he was helpless and he did'ent say much, only he said what I have stated, that whenever he came around he gave him some medicine and water; but the time we came to his room there was neither no water or no medicine there, and so I don't know if they gave him anything or not.

Q. Now you may state the condition of his face when you took him home, when you went out there the last time?

A. Well, his face was all marked up on the right side, but how he received the blows I do not know.

Q. State how it was marked. Was it bruised?

A. Yes, sir, it was kind of torn here, and it was blue and black, and his hands showed the mark where they had been tied, (illustrating by crossing hands at wrists). It looked like his hands had been crossed and tied. The marks showed it very plain.

Q. Had the rope that he was tied with cut into the flesh?

A. On one hand, I am not certain, but I think it was on the left hand right here, (indicates on the wrist), and on the other you could see where the ropes were tied.

Q. Had the ropes cut into the flesh?

A. Not very deep, only on the left side.

Q. Could you see the marks of the rope there yet on the hands?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How much of the face did these bruised spots cover, on the right side of the face?

A. It was about here and there, (illustrating on the point of the right cheek-bones).

Q. Some where on the cheek-bone?

A. Yes, sir, on the cheek-bone; but this sore never went away, and when he was buried he took it to his grave.

Q. Did these wounds seem to have been made a good while?

A. I could not tell—I had not seen him before that time for nearly two weeks.

Q. Did you ever go there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did they let you see him?
A. I saw him when he first came out. I saw him several times. Once with my daughter, and a lady in town, and once I went with Mrs. Foxworthy, but did not get to see him when Mrs. Foxworthy was with me.

Q. What was the reason?
A. Why, doctor said he always cried so after me.

Q. State his condition as to health; his physical condition when you received him from the Asylum?
A. His health was very poor.

Q. Had he fallen away?
A. O, yes, he was nothing but skin and bones.

Q. He was emaciated, was he?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he tell you how he got hurt?
A. He said he wanted to go home. That is all the reason he gave.

Q. Did he say anybody hurt him?
A. He said the barber.

Q. Who did he mean by the barber?
A. He showed him to me, and I thought it was the nurse.

Q. Did he say how he had hurt him.
A. No, sir, he didn't say.

Q. Were there any other bruises on his person, save those on his cheek and hands?
A. He had a mark on the side, but I could not tell when he received it, because he never said that he was kicked or anything like that; he had a mark on his right side.

Q. Do you know whether he had that mark in his side when he went there?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did he have it?
A. No, he hadn't the mark.

Q. What was the character of that mark on the side, was it a bruise?
A. I could not tell; it looked kind of like somebody pinched or kicked him.

Q. Was it discolored,—the skin discolored.
A. Very little.

Q. Were there any other marks?
A. No, sir.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. How long did Mr. Huffman live after he got home?
A. We took him home on the 22d of May, and he died on the 8th of June.

Q. You were living in the city at the time?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. I understood you to say that you went out there once to see him and didn't see him.
A. No, I didn't see him. I went out, this was on Thursday, and I went out there and the doctor told me I could not see him for he always cried so after me.

Q. How long before you brought him in was it that you didn't see him?
A. This was on Thursday and on Saturday I was notified by Dr. Mathewson that my husband was on the point of death, and I went about 4 o'clock.

Q. It was on Thursday you went out to see him.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And didn't see him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And Dr. Mathewson told you that he cried so after you that he didn't think it was best to see him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And on Saturday you were notified?
A. Yes, sir, and we took him home Sunday about noon.

Q. Do you know for what cause your husband was sent to the Asylum?
A. I think he was taken out for loss of memory. At least that was what I understood.

Q. On whose application was he taken to the Asylum?
A. Mr. Hoagland and some other members of the lodge came to the house and spoke of it.

Q. Of the Odd Fellows lodge?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And he was taken there on Mr. Hoagland's application?
A. No, I don't think so, but Mr. Hoagland was sheriff, and he came to our house and spoke about it, and he spoke to my husband and my husband was willing to go, and he might get better out there.

Q. What did he do at home that you thought it was best to go to the Asylum?
A. I first thought I would not let him go.

Q. But what did he do that you thought it was best for him to go?
A. I don't know but they spoke about it because he showed that his mind was not right.

Q. In what way?
A. In a good many things that he never done before.

Q. What things?
A. He took things out of the house; little things, and he never knew where they were left, and done a good many things that showed that his mind was wandering.

Q. He didn't try to hurt anybody?
A. No.

Q. How long prior to this Saturday had you seen him; this Saturday that you went there and found his face bruised?

A. I think it was two weeks on Thursday before, I think so; I think it was not more than two weeks.

Q. How was he getting along then?
A. He was sick in bed.

Q. Did you talk with him.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. He was sick in bed the Thursday before; that is the two weeks before?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you didn't see him on this last Thursday you went out?
A. No, sir.

Q. But on the following Saturday you saw him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Which ward was he in?
A. I think it was what they called the quiet ward.

Q. Was Dr. Mathewson there every time you went there?
A. When I took him out I don't think I saw Dr. Mathewson, but I think another doctor.

Q. When you visited him before that?
A. I think I saw the Doctor once or twice.

Q. Mr. Hoagland asked the Doctor how he got hurt?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the Doctor said he could give no account of it?
A. That is what the Doctor said.

Q. You asked this man they call the barber and he said he could give no account of it?
A. That is what he said.

Q. And your husband gave you no account of it, except that he said—what was it that he said?
A. He said that he wanted to go home, and that is what they struck him for.

Q. Who did he say struck him?

A. The barber; he always called him the barber.

Q. Did you see the man they called the barber?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was he the attendant on this man?
A. Well, he came into the room there, and whether he just attended on him I don't know.

Q. Do you know who he was.
A. No, I never inquired.

Q. Was he the man that came around in the night, that you called the watch man.
A. No, sir, it was a different man that came around in the night.

Q. When you took your husband away the next morning was this man you call the barber in the ward?
A. Yes, I think Dr. Mathewson and the nurse, or barber, dressed my husband and we took him home.

Q. Dr. Mathewson and the barber dressed your husband and you took him home?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the man that helped Dr. Mathewson dress your husband was the man that your husband called the barber.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you present at the time they dressed him?
A. No, I went into the other room.

Q. How long had your husband been failing before he went to the Asylum?
A. I think in September, the year before; in 1878 he began to fail.

Q. He failed very gradually?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. He failed physically and mentally.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And after he returned there was no recovery and no hopes?
A. No, sir.

Q. He kept going down and down, until death came to his relief?
A. Yes, sir.

By Mr. Connor, Senator:

Q. I think you said your husband was not a vicious man?
A. No, sir; he never was.

Q. Do you know that the person your husband called the barber was employed at the Asylum?
A. Well, I think so; I could not tell, but I saw him out there several times.

Q. Did he seem to be engaged in business there?
A. Well, yes; he came in with the Doctor when they dressed him, and I think before the other patients were locked up he came in and spoke awhile to him, and I asked him again how my husband got hurt. I asked him if he could give any account of how my husband got hurt, and he said, no; and he said my husband could not give me any account, and my husband could not answer me, and on Sunday morning when we came up, Mr. Druse and another gentleman took us home, and I asked my husband and he said the barber always done that, and I think Mr. Druse will remember that as we came in.

By Judge Mason:

Q. He went there in March and was taken away the 22nd of May.

A. Yes, sir.

Testimony of Dr. J. T. Hay.

Dr. J. T. Hay sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason.

Q. What is your occupation?

A. I am assistant physician at the Hospital for the Insane.

Q. Where were you educated medically?
A. In the city of New York.

Q. In what institution?
A. In the medical department of the University of New York City.

Q. You hold a diploma from that institution?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long have you been engaged at the Nebraska Insane Hospital?
A. Since the 1st of August, '79.

Q. You are the assistant attending physician?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You have been there all the time?
A. Yes, nearly all the time. I have been absent perhaps one month at one time.

Q. What month was that?
A. The month of September, '82.

By Senator Conner:

Q. When you say you have been at the Asylum most of the time, that is dating from when?
A. I went there the 1st of August, '79.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Do you remember a patient there by the name of Hedrick?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember a difficulty occurring between the attendant and this patient at the mortar-box?
A. No, sir, I don't remember distinctly that occurrence.

Q. Do you remember helping carry Hedrick into the Hospital?
A. No, sir.

Q. Do you remember of Hedrick's being brought in hurt while he was there?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see any marks on his face or neck.
A. I never noticed any marks at all.

Q. Were you there in the month of July last year, '82.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Every day?
A. Well, I am not positive that I was there every day all day, but I think I was.

Q. Was your attention ever called to any marks upon this patient Hedrick?
No, sir.

Q. Do you know of his being thrown down or struck or stamped upon.
A. No, sir; I don't.

Q. Now, I will ask you if he had any scratches or marks on him while he was there?
A. I never noticed any; I never heard of any.

Q. Did you go through these wards every day when you were there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you observe the patients?
A. I did.

Q. Was it not your business to observe them?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you say this patient Hedrick never had any marks?
A. Not that I remember of.

Q. Do you remember a patient by the name of Palmer, and his difficulty with the attendants as testified to; (reads extract from testimony).
A. I think I remember a patient that they had trouble with in the yard several times. He was an epileptic, his name was Palmer.

Q. Did you see the trouble?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you attend upon him when he was brought in? did he have any bruises upon him?
A. I do not know that I can recollect the exact circumstances that you refer to; I know he often had bruises about his face, particularly in one place.

Q. Where was that?
A. That was over one of h.s eyes.

Q. Do you know what made those bruises?
A. It was falling in a fit; he would usually strike in the same place; he would strike on his head and bruise his face about the eye.

Q. What patient was that? is the same patient there now?
A. He is there now in that same condition; very much bruised.

Q. What makes those bruises?
A. It is falling in an epileptic fit.

Q. Here is another patient referred to by witness named Sturm; do you know anything about that case?
A. I think that was the same man.

Q. Do you know anything about the attendants knocking him down and striking him?
A. No, sir; I think they had trouble with him several times, but I do not know that they struck him; he was a very powerful man and would attack the attendants occasionally, and in self-defense they had to use force occasionally.

Q. What do you say this patient's name was?
A. Palmer.

Q. You say he is there now?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And he has got the same bruises on his face?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And they are the result of his falling?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know anything about this woman that escaped from the Asylum once, through a hole through the brick wall?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What is the nature of her insanity?
A. Well, she is very troublesome and very vicious.

Q. What is her name?
A. Eliza Hanlin.

Q. What is she commonly called?
A. Commonly called Kate; her real name is Eliza.

Q. Give in brief the character of her insanity?
A. Well, she imagines that she is very much abused by everybody—everybody are enemies to her and are trying to steal her money, and they have got her locked up there for the purpose of robbing her, and she is constantly planning to make trouble, and if she is interfered with, she fights.

Q. Did you ever choke this patient?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever see her choked?
A. No. sir.

Q. You were not present when there was any trouble with this patient?
A. Yes, very often.

Q. What was the character of the trouble? Did you ever see her struck?
A. No, sir; I never saw her struck.

Q. Or kicked?
A. No, sir.

Q. Or choked?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever have any trouble with this patient?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Well, state in what way?

A. The attendants have frequently sent for me to help them, managing this patient; she would get troublesome, and they would either lock her into one of the rooms or get some form of restraint, and very often it would take three or four to manage her.

Q. You were there in 1878?

A. No, sir; I went there in '79.

Q. (Reads extract from testimony of Mr. Robinson). Do you know anything about that case?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear of it?

A. I do not know anything about it.

Q. (Read's extract from testimony of Andrew Nettles.) Do you know anything about that case?

A. No, sir.

Q. You never heard of it?

A. No, sir; except since this investigation began.

Q. Now I will ask you generally if you ever knew of a patient being struck with any kind of a weapon since you have been there?

A. No, sir; I don't remember any occurrence of that kind.

Q. Well, had it been done, has your inquiry and visitation of the patients been such that you would know it?

A. Well, if the patient was severely hurt I would probably find it out; I would be almost sure to find it out.

Q. Do you remember a patient getting kicked there one day in a squabble?

A. Yes, his name was Parks.

Q. Go on and state the facts about Parks. State your means of knowledge, where you were and what you saw and what was done?

A. Whenever all the male patients were out in the yard, I frequently walked out there, and when I got near the yard I saw

some trouble. There was a gathering around one man, and I discovered they had a man down holding him. There were two of the attendants holding the man down, and he was very angry and talking and threatening. I came up and told them to let him get up, and they replied that they were afraid to. I told them again to let him get up, and they let him get up, and one of the attendants led him to the house and took him to the ward, and do you want to know how they explained the circumstances?

Q. Yes, what you saw and what steps you took to asscertain the facts?

A. That is all I saw. I questioned the attendants in regard to the affair, and they explained it in this way. This patient was a new man, and he was a stranger to some of the attendants, and he wandered off and one of the attendants that he was not acquainted with told him to come back. He gave him some impudent answer and went on, and the attendant attempted to force him back and he commenced fighting, and I think he picked up a club or stick and went into a violent passion, and the attendant caught him and threw him down, and the other attendant came up, and two patients came around and commenced kicking him, and they told me that they got the patient off of him as quick as they could, and by that time I got there.

Q. Did you see the patient kick him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see any body kick him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Were these men sitting on him with their knees, the attendants, when you got there?

A. No, sir; one was holding his arms, and the other had him by the shoulders, as near as I can remember.

Q. Did you see the attendant strike him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Were there any marks on him as though he had been struck?

A. Well, there were bruises on his side, and there were some marks about his face, but very little, as though he might have been scratched in the struggle—scratches or bruises.

Q. State fully the nature of the injuries that he received at that time?

A. I think one of his ribs were broken. That was the main injury, and there were a few scratches about his face.

Q. When you came up with the patients, they were said to have injured him.

A. They were standing around, but they were not interfering at all at that time.

Q. How close were they standing?

A. Well, I couldn't tell; I presume a few feet away.

Q. Now you may state if you know of any acts of cruelty on the part of the officers or attendants of that Asylum during the time you have been there?

A. No, sir, I do not, with the exception of a few cases that were reported at once. I have seen circumstances that I thought were not right, and I reported them always to the Superintendent, and he has taken such action as he thought proper.

Q. What has been that action?

A. Well, he usually discharged the attendant, if he thought the attendant was at fault.

Q. Invariably he discharged the attendant?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. I will ask you if any attendant is permitted to strike or kick a patient under any circumstances?

A. No, sir; except in self-defense, and then they are allowed to do anything of course—that is, in their own defense.

Q. Who makes the rules that give them that liberty?

A. The Board of Public Lands and Buildings. I believe they were the trustees originally.

Q. Now is it your custom to go daily through each of these wards?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How many times?

A. Well, some of the wards I am in two or there times, and perhaps half a dozen times, and in the female wards I am hardly ever in more than once a day.

Q. Do you mean two or three times each day?

A. Yes, in the male wards.

Q. I will ask you if you make it you particular business to see each patient every day?

A. Yes, sir, nearly every day, some days I don't see all of the patients.

Q. Who are those patients that you do not see?

A. There are occasionally patients that work in the field; patients that go out early in the morning and patients that are in a chronic condition, that unless there is some special reason, I think it is not necessary to see them.

Q. Have you been in the habit of sending females to the wash-room to wash?

A. No, sir, I have not?

Q. State how it is about that?

A. Well, there are about three or four that go out to the wash house nearly every day.

Q. Why?

A. Well, they are requested to go out and ask to go out, and they seem to like to go out.

Q. Is any body there required to work unless they desire to?

A. No, sir; they are not compelled to work. We sometimes use a little force to get the patient at work—to start them to work.

Q. Why.

A. Because we think it will be better for the patient to get out often, though he does not want to, and we often start a patient in that way, and they will work willingly, and it will be a benefit to them.

Q. You mean to their physical health?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In any instance is a patient compelled or desired to go out unless for his physical improvement?

A. No, sir.

Q. Has that been the rule since you have been in he Insane Asylum?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember one time last summer, of a patient attempting to escape and being caught over towards the railroad and brought back to th the Asylum;

A. Yes, I remember that.

Q. Were you there when he was brought back?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, you may state his condition?

A. Well I discovered that his face was bleeding a little from a few scratches on one side.

Q. State the nature and character of that injury.

A. It was very light.

Q. Did you ascertain with what it was done at the time?

A. Yes, sir; I was told that he scratched his face in getting through a fence.

Q. What kind of a fence?

A. A wire fence.

Q. You may state if the patient had been struck in the face.

A. No sir, at least he showed no marks.

Q. Had he been kicked?

A. Well I did'nt see any signs of it. He seemed to be as active as ever and made no complaint.

Q. Did you see the attendants when they brought him back?

A. Yes, sir; I was there during the whole transaction. I saw him start and saw the attendants start after him myself and watched it. I saw the time he started until he got back.

Q. First, did you see them all the time? Did you see the attendants in pursuit?

A. Yes; They were in my sight, but they were so far away that I could not see what they did. I saw them overtake the patient and saw they had a little struggle with him, and he was brought back.

Q. Did you see any body kick him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see any body strike him?

A. No sir, it was so far away I could not tell.

Q. Do you know this man Ryma?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember an occurrence on June 12th, '79? Were you there then?

A. No; I was not there then.

Q. Nor in May, '79?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now, I will ask you if it is a part of your duty to see the men go out, and see them come in when they go out of the Asylum?

A. I do, frequently. I did not every day and every time they go out. I sometimes go out with them, and sometimes go out after they are in the yard, and very often see them come in.

Q. Now, I will ask you if you have observed the men when they are out taking exercise or at work?

A. I observed them very often.

Q. And when they came in?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you known any man kicked and bruised from his exercise?

A. No, sir; I have known them to come in in a bruised condition, but I dont remember now of a man coming in bruised from blows.

Q. What did the bruises?
A. Usually falling in a fit.

Q. What kind of a fit?
A. Epileptic.

Q. What is the treatment as regards humanity and kindness of Dr. Mathewson towards these patients?
A. Well sir, far as I have seen, he treats them humanely and instructs his employees to treat them in that way.

Q. Now, what is done in case an employee fails to do that?
A. Well, they are generally discharged.

Q. You say generally. Do you know of any exception to that rule?
A. Yes, I have known exceptions to that rule where the attendant was about to go away of his own accord. The fault was overlooked for a few days.

Q. Why?
A. Well in case an attendant has been there a long time and is about to go away, an occurrence might happen with that attendant that would be overlooked that would not be overlooked in case of another attendant. Inasmuch as he had been there so long, and had given good service, and he was going away at a certain time anyway.

Q. Did you have any trouble in getting attendants there?
A. Yes, sir; and that is another reason why attendants have been kept a few days. A poor attendant is very often considered better than none.

Q. You say it is your universal custom to go through the male wards at least once and sometimes two or three times a day to examine the physical condition and appearance of the patients?
A. Yes, sir; I saw the patients once a day at least.

Q. Would it be possible for patients to be kicked and struck in the face and bruised without your having knowledge of it?
A. No, sir; unless there was sone deception used by the attendant.

Q. Have you ever known a patient in the ward to be struck in the face, and bruised and kicked?

A. Yes, sir; I have known it to be done by other patients, and I have known it to be done by attendants.

Q. What was the occasion of its being done by attendants?

A. Well, they almost always plead self defense; that is always the case.

Q. Did you ever see it done personally?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now, when it is done?

A. I usually report it to the Superintendent.

Q. And then what takes place?

A, He uses his own judgment about what shall be done.

Q. What is that judgment?

A. If he believes the attendant has abused the patient and he can possibly get along without the attendant, he lets him go.

Q. Is your report in writing?

A. No, sir; it is verbal.

Q. Do you make any recommendation with your report?

A. No, sir; I never do.

Q. But you report the fact, and then the Superintendent exercises his judgment?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, is that done in every instance?

A. In every instance of abuse or what I considered abuse.

Q. Yes, sir?

A. Yes, sir; always.

Q. Do you consider it abuse when a patient is struck in the face or bruised?

A. I do if the attendant does it for punishment.

Q. Suppose he does it for correction?

A. I consider that abuse.

Q. In what case would you not consider it abuse?

A. I would not consider it abuse if the attendant was defending himself; if he was attacked by the patient and had to use that force, and if it was necessary in self defense.

Q. And that is the only case in which you think it is excusable?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Is that the only case in which the authorities of the Asylum looked upon it as excusable?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now I will ask you if any restraint or imposition is put upon these patients to your knowledge, or any one of them except such as is regarded by you and those in charge of the Asylum as necessary for the physical well-being of those patients.

A. No, sir.

Q. Now you state the fact as you have learned it during the period you have been there, whether it is the genuine purpose of Dr. Mathewson to treat these patients as kindly as is possible, consistently with their safety and well-being.

A. Yes, sir, I believe that is his intention. I do not know why he would have any other purpose.

Q. I will ask you if in any other instance where an act of cruelty or barbarity has been brought to his knowledge, if he has been disposed to overlook it or cover it up or hide it?

A. No, sir, I do not recall any.

Q. Do you remember the Mr. Huffman that was brought there in March, last year and taken away the 22d of May, and shortly thereafter died?

A. No, Mr. Huffman was there in '79, I think. I did not know that man.

Q. Now I will ask you whether the conveniences, or rather the necessities for restraining and controlling violent patients and maniacs are provided at the Asylum?

A. We have the necessities, yes, sir.

Q. Have you the modern improvements for that purpose?

A. No, not all of them; so far as restraint is concerned, we have enough of that.

Q. How are you provided with strong rooms?

A. With rooms we are not. The building itself I don't think is as well adapted to taking care of that class of patients as it might be.

Question by Senator Connor:

Q. Did you ever have any experience in Insane Asylums before entering the service of the Nebraska Asylum?

A. No, sir, none at all.

Q. How long had you been engaged in the practice of medicine before you became connected with this Insane Asylum?

A. About a year and a half.

Q. And none of that time was spent in any Asylum?

A. No, sir.

Q. How long had Dr. Mathewson been in the Asylum when you went there.

A. About two years.

Q. Had the Doctor ever been connected with any other Asylum that you know?

A. Not to my knowledge.

Q. If I heard you correctly you say you remember nothing about the Hedrick case?

A. No, sir, I do not.

Q. Nor you don't remember anything about the Palmer case?

A. I remember about the Hedrick case. I remember they had trouble with the patient.

Q. But you know nothing of the particulars of that trouble?

A. Of that particular man I do not. I know he was a troublesome patient at one time, and we had to move him from the quiet ward to the violent one.

Q. You know nothing of the attendant knocking him down upon an occasion?

A. No, sir.

Q. You remember the woman called Kate. Now do you know anything about Dr. Mathewson choking that woman?
A. No, I do not.

Q. You do not know that he did not choke her?
A. No, sir.

Q. In the case of the patient who wanted to go towards the barn, as testified to by one John Robinson; I believe you say you know nothing of the case?
A. No, I cannot remember that particular case.

Q. Nor anything of the case testified to by Nettles, where a patient was hurt by a brick-bat.
A. No, I never heard of that case.

Q. You have testified in your testimony that you did not know of any patient being struck with any kind of a weapon. I suppose you are testifying now from your own knowledge and observation?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You don't mean to be understood as saying that there has not been patients struck with weapons or bricks?
A. If there had it has never come to my knowledge.

Q. You are not pretending to testify but that it might have been done?
A. No, sir.

Q. But what you testify is that it did not come to your knowledge?
A. No, sir.

Q. Recalling your attention to the patient Parks, I will have you state how far you were from the Asylum at the time of the injury to Parks?
A. I was in the Asylum at the time.

Q. Then how far was Parks and his attendants at the first time you saw him?

A. I suppose they were about 200 feet. I didn't notice that there was any trouble.

Q. You were in the building and they were out?
A. Yes, sir, I think I was on the back porch of the building.

Q. What first attracted your attention in the direction of Parks?
A. Well, I went out there as I frequently do to see how they were getting along, and when I got within a few rods I noticed there was a crowd in one place. I supposed they had some trouble with one of the patients.

Q. Was that the first time your attention had been called towards Parks?
A. Yes, sir, that was the first.

Q. How many were around Parks?
A. O, I suppose there were twenty, or perhaps more, that were gathered around.

Q. That would be natural, and it was customary for these patients to cluster around?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Could you see through the crowd and see Parks on the ground?
A. No, not until I got close to them.

Q. How close did you go to Parks before you observed him clearly?
A. O, I suppose I was a few feet away before I understood who it was and the circumstances.

Q. What was the true condition of Parks and the attendants when you first saw them?
A. Parks was on his back and the attendants were holding him, and he was struggling to get away.

A. How were the attendants holding him, were they sitting on him?
A. No, there was nothing of that kind. One was at his head and one was at his feet, as I remember.

Q. Who were the attendants?

A. I remember one was Mr. Christner and I could not say positively who the other was.

Q. What were the patients doing?

A. They were looking on.

Q. How far were the patients from Mr. Parks?

A. They were gathered around as close as they could stand.

Q. Were they interfering in any way?

A. Not at that time.

Q. Did you see them interfere in any way?

A. No, I did not.

Q. Did they manifest a disposition to kick?

A. No, not at that time. I did not notice anything in regard to it.

Q. Was Dietrick Meyer there?

A. I could not tell.

Q. Have you in your memory the names of any of the patients who were there?

A. Not as I observed them. I could not tell who stood around there.

Q. Don't you remember that you got up close to them, and can't you recall anybody who was there?

A. No, I cannot recall any of the patients.

A. And you are sure you don't remember of Dietrick Meyer being there?

A. No, sir.

Q. How long was this patient held down while you were there?

A. Well, they let him up almost immediately after I spoke to them the second time.

Q. Who took him into the house?

A. Christner. I was with him and he held his arms. He said he was afraid to let his arms loose; that he would pick up a club or stone and strike.

Q. I understood you say that Christner said at that time that he had used a club?

A. Yes, sir, that he attempted to.

Q. Did you see any club about there?

A. No, but there were some a little way from the yard.

Q. But you didn't see any club about there where the trouble occurred?

A. No, I did not.

Q. Now when you got the patient into the house did you make an examination of him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Immediately?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you then ascertain that one of his ribs were broken?

A. I did.

Q. And he was so treated for a broken rib?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now all you know about the patient kicking Parks is what you derived from Christner?

A. Mr. Chrisner and the other attendant. I think that there was one attendant in the house who saw some of it, and he thought they didn't get them away soon enough, and they said they got the patient off as soon os they could.

Q. What was the condition of the other ribs of the patient, were they bruised?

A. No, I didn't discover any bruise, only in the region of where the rib was broken.

Q. Did the bruises seem to be all together?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now in regard to these women patients who wash. Is it not a fact that they wash every day, or nearly so?

A. Yes, but they change occasionally, or some of them.

Q. I want to know what per cent of woman wash. Is there not a certain number of women?

A. Yes, there is only a certain number of women who wash.

Q. Now they wash every day you say?
A. Yes, nearly every day.

Q. It is pretty hard work to wash?
A. Well, I suppose it is.

Q. It is about as much as a sane woman wants to do?
A. I don't think they had a very hard day's work out there.

Q. What time do they go out?
A. They go out about 8 o'clock.

Q. What time do they return for dinner?
A. They come in at noon.

Q. What time do they go out again?
A. About 2 o'clock.

Q. What time do they return?
A. About 5 o'clock.

Q. And that is kept up by certain patients day after day is it?
A. Yes, sir; they don't all wash; they don't wash all the time.

Q. Don't you believe that if these women patients were told that they could cease washing at 10 o'clock that they would prefer to do it?
A. I don't know; perhaps you wouldn't get any answer at all.

Q. Suppose they understood that it was a mere voluntary thing, that they could go there and wash or not; or that they could quit at any time they felt a mind to; is it not your opinion that they would quit, if you could impress it upon them?
A. Well, I don't know whether they would or not. I don't know, probably some of them would.

Q. Under whose control are these wash women, the patients?
A. There were three girls and one man in the laundry.

Q. Have you some men whom you call laundry men there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And they are put under his charge?

A. Yes, under his charge, and the girls that worked in the laundry.

Q. Who is he?

A. His name is Carter.

Q. There is a great deal of laundry work to be done in an institution?

A. Yes, sir, a great deal.

Q. And it is sometimes pretty difficult to get help?

A. Yes, I believe it is. I think we had generally not much trouble in getting help at the laundry.

Q. What chance in your jugdment would there be to be mentally and physically improved, who had to wash every day?

A. Well, I think it would depend upon circumstances. I know that there is a patient working in the laundry now, that is very much improved since she has been there. She certainly is in very much better condition.

Q. How long has she been working in the laundry?

A. I don't know exactly, but perhaps two months.

Q. But as a rule you would say that a patient, either male or female, would be restored to health of mind and body by reasonable exercise and labor, would you not?

A. Yes, certainly by reasonable exercise.

Q. Do you call work from 8 o'clock in the morning to 5 o'clock in the evening, with intermission for dinner, reasonable exercise for an insane patient?

A. I don't think they worked all that time hard. Certainly I don't think they worked unreasonably hard.

Q. Still it is all under control of the foreman, Carter?

A. Yes, sir, it is under his control, and the girls who help him. I never supposed that they worked hard.

Q. Did you ever give your attention to that, to study into it and see from day to day whether they were working hard or not?

A. I have noticed their appearance.

Q. Did you ever go into the washing room, you or Dr. Mathewson in your knowledge, to see whether they were worked hard or not.

A. Well, I've been there, and I have always noticed and talked with the patients very often. I think there is one who works there every day, who enjoys life as well as any person in this house. She never considered it a hardship or thought they were worked hard.

Q. What time do the others go the laundry, those that are not patients; the men or women who help Carter, what time do they go to work?

A. I think they go—I cannot tell the exact time.

Q. What time do they quit, at noon?

A. They quit about half past twelve I think.

Q. About the same time the patients quit?

A. A little after; they have their dinner about a half hour later.

Q. What time do they quit in the evening?

A. Some evenings they are at work late, and sometimes they quit at supper time. It depends upon the work.

Q. But these patients never go out there after supper?

A. No, sir; that is not as a rule; but I think they have been out perhaps a few times.

Q. That would be when you were pressed for help or something of that kind?

A. Yes, but it is not customary.

Q. Now in your judgment and your managing the Asylum, if you believed this washing would be healthful, why wouldn't you have all the women patients wash?

A. Well, some of them are not suited to that work, and some would not like it at at all. They could not wash, and besides there would not be a chance for them.

Q. Would it not be a good idea to fix up a place expressly for washing.

A. I don't know but that it might be a good plan to give them some kind of work, and I think they would do it.

Q. Now you have testified that the management of this Asylum was in your judgment conducted on humane principals?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now state to me how you account for all the acts of cruelty, that have been testified to by the witnesses who have testified in this case?

A. Well, the only way I can understand it, is that they in some cases have willfully misrepresented, and in other cases they have been deceived themselves, and possibly they have seen cases I have not seen.

Q. How far were you off when they caught Searle?

A. Probably a mile.

Q. As a matter of course you could not see what they did?

A. No, sir; but I could see that they had some kind of struggle.

Q. You could simply see the fact that there was a struggle?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And so far as striking or kicking is concerned, you could not see that?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now you state that he showed no marks of being struck or kicked?

A. No, of course I didn't examine him.

Q. Did you examine him to see?

A. No, I didn't, except his face, of course I examined his face.

Q. You did not have him remove his clothing?

A. No, I didn't examine him any further.

Q. You state in your testimony that you would frequently go out with the patients, and have known them when they returned to have bruises on their face—you testified to that?

A. Yes, sir?

Q. But you testified also that you did not know of their being kicked. They had bruises on their faces, but you did not know them to be kicked. Now did you make it a point to examine their faces when they returned?

A. No, I didn't examine them particularly when they returned to

the yard. They are not any more likely to get hurt there than they are inside, unless they should fall.

Q. If they should fall on the ground it would not hurt so much as a fall on the floor?

A. I think it would; if they should fall on a stone it would hurt more severely.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Do you remember the patient Lawson, from Lincoln, who died at the Asylum?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. It was stated that there were bruises on his face and head?

A. Yes, he had a slight bruise about one of his eyes.

Q. What caused that?

A. It occurred as I understood, his attendant struck him.

Q. Who was the attendant?

A. It was the attendant or one of the patients, I think it was one of the attendants.

Q. Do you know the facts about it?

A. I know that he was struck, and they said that they had trouble with him, and he was violent, but the attendant never admitted that he struck the attendant.

Q. Who was the attendant?

A. As I remember it was a man named Gandy.

Q. Where is he now?

A. He is in Chicago.

Q. How badly was he hurt?

A. Not very badly, only an ordinary black eye.

Q. Do you remember Mullis?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know about his going out to work one morning?

A. Yes, sir; I remember that circumstance.

Q. Do you know about his face being bloody when he went out to work?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What were the facts?

A. Mr. Taylor brought the patient in to me in the morning soon after he went out with his clothes or his shirt covered with blood, and he remarked to me that he did'nt think the patient was in very good condition to go out to work. I took the patient to the ward and examined his wounds and questioned the attendant in regard to it, and found that he was not very much hurt, but his nose had been bleeding and his clothing looked a great deal worse than his face, and the attendant explained it that he had attacked and that he had struck him on the nose, and his nose bled, but that he did'nt suppose he hurt him, and he let him out without noticing the blood. I blamed the attendants more for letting the man out in the condition he was in, because I was not very much surprised that he had a fight with him because it had occurred before with the same man.

Q. Why were you not surprised?

A. Because the same thing had occured before, and he would suddenly attack a person.

Q. Was he injured or bruised about the face?

A. Very little.

Q. Who was the attendant?

A. The attendant's name was Slaterly as I remember it.

Q. Where is he now?

A. In the St. Joe Insane Asylum.

Q. State what the custom was when the night watch was sick, the female night watch, who had care of the night key of the ward?

A. Dr. Mathewson, generally.

Q. Where is Mullis now?

A. He is at the Asylum.

Q. What ls his condition now?

A. His condition is about the same as when he went there. He is more quiet.

Q. This other patient, Lawson—did that blow or that injury which he recieved then, affect his speech?

A. No, I never supposed it did.

Q. Did you see him every day?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know whether it did or not?
A. I am confident that it did not. Of course I don't know it.

Q. Did you notice any difference in his ability to talk?
A. No, sir; I did not; he did not have much ability to talk.

Q. Have you a list of his clothing and money?
A. Yes; I believe I brought a list with me. (Produces list.)

Q. How did you get that list?
A. Well, when a patient is received there, I make out a list or the attendant that receives them, and he copies them into the clothing book. I think I copied this myself; but whether I counted the clothing, I do not know.

Q. What did he bring there?
A. On Feb. 25, he brought two coats, one pair of pants, three vests, an overcoat, three shirts, one pair of drawers, one under-shirt, one pair of socks, one hat, pair of boots, watch, money in cash $1.31, and copy of lease.

Q. State what he had at the time of his death, and what disposition was made of it?
A. I cannot state that. He received a little clothing after that. That money was used to buy him a pair of shoes or slippers, and he received a pair of drawers and undershirt from somewheres. I do not know whether they were bought with that money or whether his brother sent them to him. March 3rd, he received two shirts, two undershirts, a pair of drawers, a pair of socks, and two handkerchiefs, and that is all he ever received.

Q. What had he when he died?
A. I cannot tell; but he had but very little if any thing.

Q- And how much cash in hand?
A. Six cents.

Q. Whose business is it to know how the account stands when he leaves?
A. The stewards.

Q. What was done with the watch?
A. That was returned to his brother.

Q. Do you know what was done with any other part of the clothing?
A. No. He claimed that he had a book, but we never could find it, and his valise was old, and I do not think it was preserved. I am not certain whether he got the valise or not, but I know he got the watch.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. You say that Lawson was struck by an attendant. How did you get that information?
A. Well, I think the attendant admitted that he had hit him, thoug hhe did'nt admit it directly.

Q. Was any inquiry made about the fact of strrking that man Lawson, by Dr. Mathewson?
A. I cannot remember whether I reported it to him, or whether he discovered it, or what was said of it.

Q. The attendant was not discharged, was he?
A. No, sir; but he went a way soon after that; he was not considered a very good attendant.

Q. You say he had a black eye. Is it not a fact that in addition to a black eye, that he had a cut in his face?
A. I don't remember any other.

Q. He might have had a cut there?
A. Possibly, but he was not seriously hurt, and did'nt consider that he was marked.

Q. Don't you know as a fact that he complained of a headache, several days?
A. No, sir; I do not.

Q. What hurt Mullis, or who hurt him?
A. I think the attendant hurt him.

Q. What attendant?
A. Slaterly.

Q. You may state if there has been female attendants on the female wards in the Asylum—nighgt watches I mean—female night watches in the female wards of the Asylum, constantly?

A. No, sir; not constantly, but nearly all the time.

Q. How great an interval has there been where there there have been male attendants in the female wards at night?

A. There has never been anything of that kind.

Q. Did any of the night watches have any keys of the female wards?

A. No, sir.

Q. They never did?

A. No, sir, I think not; not to my knowledge.

Q. Are you absolutely sure of that?

A. Yes; as a rule I am. As a rule they were never allowed the keys.

Q. You have got female night-watches now?

A. Yes, one.

Q. What is the reason that you have not had them constantly, before, or that Dr. Mathewson has not?

A. Well, as I understood it, he had no suitable person and could not find one.

Q. Wouldn't you regard that as a case of neglect?

A. Well, I don't know as I am a judge of that.

Q. Certainly such a thing ought not to exist in an institution of that kind, ought it?

A. Well, I think it is better, and it is certainly desirable.

J. T. HAY.

Testimony of Charles Carter.

Charles Carter sworn, (colored).

Questioned by Judge Mason.

Q. You are the laundry man at the asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You have charge of the laundry work?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What instructions does Dr. Mathewson give you as to the females in the wards who work in the laundry, as to their work and treatment?

A. Well, he has always told me, and my orders are to put those patients which I have out there to work. They are not to be forced to work at all. I am not to force them to work at all, and they are not to be either hit, slapped or bruised, in no way, shape or form. They are to be treated well.

Q. Do you remember of his talking to you in the presence of Mr. Druse, while Druse was at the Asylum, in May, 1879, concerning the laundry?

A. I remember going to the office in the morning; I remember of taking my patients to the laundry, and one of the women, I don't remember her name, but any way, there was one of the women, after being at the laundry a little while, she seemed to get kind of cross and looked like—well, she got cross, and I could not pacify her, and I went and said to Dr. Mathewson like this, to the best of my knowledge I said, I would like to have another woman, and he asked if I didn't have enough to work out there—as many as usual, and I told him that I had, but there was one of them that was cutting up out there, and Dr. Mathewson said like this, you take her by the arm and kind of shake her lightly, but I want you to understand that we don't want these women or men, none of them, neither bruised or hurt, in any way or form; I will discharge any attendant or employee I have if I know them to mistreat a patient. These were the words as near as I can recollect.

Q. You may state now whether these women that go to the laundry, whether it is optional with them to work or not, as they choose?

A. Well, I have four patients, women, working in the laundry now, and these women, when I bring them to the laundry, about 8 o'clock in the morning, they will go to work right away. Well, now, they work along until a quarter to twelve, then I return them back to the wards again. Once in a while one of them stops, and they get tired and sit down, just when they please, and rest, and when it is wash-day there, they go out usually about 8 o'clock, and stay out about the same time, but we generally get through about 4 o'clock at the latest.

Q. Do you ever compel them to labor?
A. Never, never.

Q. Did you ever use any means to force them to labor?
A. I never have.

Q. I will ask you if you have known of any acts of neglect or cruelty to the patients in the asylum?
A. My place is in the laundry, and not in the building.

Q. But have you known of any in the laundry?
A. There has been none in the laundry. No mistreatment towards the patients in the laundry.

Q. Have you ever known of any anywhere else?
A. Well, I saw a row out in the yard one day, but I cannot tell about it; I was quite a distance away, and they had a row there, but I do not know how it commenced or anything about it, and I would not state.

Q. Who had a row?
A. A patient and some of the attendants.

Q. What time was that?
A. It was one afternoon this last fall.

Q. Do you know who the attendants were?
A. One of them was Mr. Christner, and another, I think, was a man by the name of Gilbert.

Q. You didn't see enough to know anything about the facts?
A. I cannot tell.

Q. Is that all you have seen there?

A. That is all I have seen there.

Q. How long have you worked there?

A. I have worked there a few days over ten years, my whole time while I have been in this state.

Q. Your business has been in the laundry all the time?

A. Yes, sir; I have had charge of the laundry the whole time.

Q. Have you any men in the laundry?

A. Yes, sir; seven men.

Q. How many women, besides the ones you spoke of?

A. Three hired women.

Q. Did you ever report the case to the doctor that you saw out in the yard?

A. I never did.

Q. Why didn't you?

A. Well, I had two reasons for not telling the doctor about it. Well, I can say, I am sure that the doctor would have discharged the attendant, and the next reason was that I thought if I went and reported and had that attendant discharged away from there, then all the balance of the attendants would have been down on me, because I believed Dr. Mathewson would have discharged him.

Q. Why did you believe that?

A. I saw them when they dragged the patient in, and I did not know whether he was in a fit or what was the matter with him; but I saw them dragging him anyway, and I thought it was best to 'tend to my own business, and I didn't tell the Doctor; I didn't tell anybody.

Q. Is it not your instruction if you see any acts of that kind to report them?

A. Well, no; I cannot say that it was, my instructions were where my work was.

Questioned by Mr. Connor:

Q. About what time was it that this woman patient that you spoke of got refractory; in what year was it?

A. I don't remember in what year it was.

Q. Do you remember in what month it was.

A. I don't, but I remember just as well when it occurred as if it had been last week.

Q. You remember the circumstance, but you don't remember the time?

A. I don't remember the time.

Q. Do you remember what she said.

A. O, she was swearing and going on.

Q. Do you know the words she used?

A. O, she was swearing and going on. I know the words she used?

Q. And she was very refractory?

A. Yes, she was at that time.

Q. Now what did you do when the Doctor told you to take her by the arm; did you go back and do that?

A. I went back and took the woman to her work, and talked to her and she went back?

Q. And you got her back to work?

A. Yes, sir; I have never had occasion to strike. I have been almost killed by them; I have had my teeth all knocked out, and I have the first patient yet to strike, slap or hit.

Q. You say at the time you went to the doctor that he told you right then and there not to kick or strike a patient?

A. Or abuse them in any way, shape or form.

Q. Is that what the doctor said then?

A. That is what Dr. Mathewson told me.

Q. At what time I mean.

A. Yes, at that time.

Q. That has been a good, long while. Can you remember that he used just those words?

A. Yes, I can; I can remember words my master used a longer time than that.

Q. Had he not told you that before then?

A. Yes, he told me before, and he has told me so often since.

Q. How many female patients did washing there?
A. Four.

Q. They are the regular ones that wash?
A. Those four, yes; they are there more than any of the rest. They are just as willing to go there to the laundry as they are to go to their meals, every bit.

Q, Where did you receive those patients?
A. I received them at the ward door.

Q. You go up there after them?
A. I go over after them.

Q. You say they are just as willing as they can be; how do you know what goes on inside; how do you know that they are willing; can you hear what is going on inside of the wards?
A. Any patient that is not willing to go to the laundry, or if they say they do not want to go, they are left.

Q. How do you know that?
A. I have been there.

Q. Who did you receive the wash patients from; who turned them over to you?
A. Sometimes the Doctor and sometimes an attendant.

Q. Do you know that these women ever complained before that they did not want to go to the wash?
A. I have heard no complaint.

Q. You do not know that there has been complaint?
A. No, but they seemed willing.

Q. Are they brought out and turned over to you?
A. That is a rule, and always has been, and all attendants that have charge of patients are to go there and get them. They are not turned out as any sane person would be of course.

Q. Now what you mean to say is that you find them at the ward door when you go after them?
A. I go there, and I call for the ladies to go to the laundry. The door is opened and they go right out and go to the laundry.

Q. And they go just as willingly as they would go to the table to eat?

A. Just the same.

Q. Do they manifest the same desire to go down there quick and get into the wash-tub as they do to get to the dinner table;

A. Just about the same. They rush right out and go to work. I have got two women working in the laundry now that I can hardly stop to go to dinner; they seem to like to keep right on.

Q. What do you do when Sunday comes with such patients. I should think they would be very miserable?

A. I do not know how miserable they are.

Q. Now you state that you saw acts of cruelty at the Asylum. State where you were standing when you saw it?

A. I was between the laundry and the main building, the center building, out of doors, when I saw that.

Q. What direction was that from you?

A. It was right north.

Q. How far?

A. It was 100 yards, anyhow, or over.

Q. It was in view was it?

A. I was coming from the house to the laundry and I heard a racket down there and I looked.

Q. When you looked what was the first thing you saw?

A. The first thing I saw down there, I saw licks pass, but whether any of them struck the man or not I do not know, and I would not say I saw licks pass.

Q. What was the next thing you saw?

A. I saw kicks next.

Q. Was the patient down then?

A. Yes, the patient seemed to be down. There was an enormous crowd around, and as good as I could see the man was down.

Q. And then you saw kicks?

A. I saw kicks. Whether the man received any of them or not is more than I can say.

Q. But you saw kicking done?
A. Yes, I saw kicking done.

Q. And then you say you saw them dragging him along?
A. Yes, sir; there was a man had hold of each arm, and they dragged him right along into the basement door.

Q. Did they get him up?
A. They did not get him up when he was in my sight.

Q. Did they pull him along on the ground?
A. His body was kind of raised up.

Q. What was that patient's name?
A. I do not know. If I was going to be hung I could not tell his name.

Q. Did you know him by sight?
A. No, I could not say that I did. It was too far off.

Q. About when was it that this occurred?
A. I do not know whether it was in September or October, or somewhere about that time I thought of last year.

Q. This man Christner was one of the parties?
A. Yes, Christner was one.

Q. You thought that was pretty cruel treatment, did you not?
A. I thought so.

Q. Now you say that is the only act of cruelty that you know anything about?
A. I said that that was all I saw out there.

Q. What did you ever see at any other place?
A. Well, I did see a man by the name of Burns, when he was there; I saw him slap a patient man out of a chair right away from the table. But Burns has gone long ago, but I saw that.

Q. How long has Burns been gone?
A. I do not know.

Q. He has not been gone but a few weeks?
A. He has been gone a week or so.

Q. He has gone out to the country?
A. I do not know where he has gone to.

Q. Is that the only act of cruelty that you ever saw this man Burns exercise towards this patient?
A. Yes, sir; that is all as good as can recollect.

Q. Did you ever see a patient choked there?
A. Never. I never saw a patient choked.

Q. Did you ever see any other beating or hitting scrapes there?
A. I saw Mr. Christner push a man with a chair.

Q. A patient?
A. Yes, a patient man.

Q. Was he in the ward or out doors?
A. It was in the ward.

Q. Is it not a fact that this man Christner has a notorious reputation as a cruel man towards the patients?
A. I do not know.

Q. Is not that the talk?
A. I do not know.

Q. Have you not heard such talk as that?
A. I do not know whether I have or not.

Q. You do not deny but what there has been such talk?
A. Well, there is a heap of talk, and if we believe everything we hear I do not know what would become of us, and I am only talking about it so far as I know.

Q. Did you ever see any acts of cruelty of any kind, choking, pounding, beating, striking or hitting through any of the windows of the Asylum from the laundry or any other place?
A. No; not as I can recollect, except one time I remember of. I saw Mr. Gandy when he was there—I saw him have a patient man chugging him up against the window grates there.

Q. Did he chug him up with his fist?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Where is Gandy?
A. I do not know where he is.

Q. Do you know the patient's name?
A. I do not know.

Q. How long ago has that happened?
A. It has been three or four years ago.

Q. How long was Gandy there—about how long?
A. Gandy was there two or three years or so.

Q. Were the acts that you have just detailed all the acts of cruelty that you ever saw there?
A. That is all that I remember of, I believe, to the best of my knowledge.

Q. You say there are seven men in the laundry—are any of those men patients?
A. They are all patients.

Q. What time did you get these men in the morning?
A. I got them at eight o'clock.

Q. What time did you quit at noon with them?
A. Quarter to twelve.

Q. What time did you take them in the afternoon?
A. Two o'clock.

Q. What time did you quit in the evening?
A. Five o'clock.

Q. Have you got the same seven all the time?
A. Not all the time. We have a change of men. There are one or two of the men that have worked out there for quite a while, but there is more or less changing all the time.
Q. But you have generally the same men?
A. Well, I generally have them when I can get them, but there are sometimes men that do not want to go to the laundry, and we leave them and take somebody else.

his
CHARLES X CARTER.
mark.

Testimony of Kate Brink.

Kate Brink sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason.

Q. You are an attendant at the Nebraska Insane Hospital?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long have you been there?
A. Nearly five years.

Q. What other asylum have you been an attendant at?
A. At Oshkosh, Winconsin.

Q. How long?
A. Two years and nearly ten months.

Q. In what years?
A. In 1877, in 1876 and 1875.

Q. And you have been in this Asylum five years.
A. Nearly five years.

Q. What wards have you been in here?
A. I have been on all the wards, most especially on the third, the refractory ward, and a little over a year past on the first ward.

Q. And during any of that time have you been night watch?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the day attendant?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, during that time you may state if you have seen any acts of cruelty or neglect on the part of the attendants or any officer of the institution towards the patients, or a patient, and if so tell the circumstances and facts?
A. I do not remember any.

Q. You can not remember any?
A. No, that I would call cruelty or neglect.

Q. Have you seen a female patient choked?
A. I have not.

Q. Have you seen a female patient struck on the face with the doubled fist?

A. No, I have not.

Q. Have you seen them struck in the person anywhere with a doubled fist?

A. No.

Q. Were you there at the time Miss Sisson was there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you in the same ward with her?

A. I was not.

Q. Do you remember the time when the night-watch was sick on the third ward?

A. I remember the time the night-watch was sick. I do not remember the dates, but she was sick.

Q. Do you know who at that time carried the key to the ward while the night-watch was sick?

A. I presume the keys were given into Dr. Mathewson's care.

Q. The third ward is where the worst patients are?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. The second ward is the next best, or rather not so bad?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the first ward is where the convalescent, or those that are not so deranged are kept?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You may state what proportion of the time you were on the third ward?

A. I was there a short time at first. I went on that ward at first.

Q. When did you go there?

A. In February, I think, of 1878.

Q. How long did you remain on the third ward?

A. I cannot remember just how long, but sometime in the spring.

Q. About how long? I am not particular about the definite length of time.

A. About three months.

Q. Then on what ward?
A. I was a short time on the second ward.

Q. How long were you there?
A. Well, I think two or three months, but I cannot tell just how long.

Q. Then what ward?
A. I went on night-watch.

Q. How long were you on night-watch?
A. I think it was seven months.

Q. In which ward?
A. Well, I had an oversight of all three wards.

Q. They kept then but one night-watch for the three female wards?
A. Unless in case of persons sick, then of course one of the attendants serves.

Q. Then where did you go, on to what ward?
A. Back on the third ward.

Q. How long did you remain on the third ward then?
A. I think eight months, but I would not be positive.

Q. Then to which ward did you go?
A. Then I went on night-watch again.

Q. How long were you on night-watch at that time?
A. I think I was on watch at that time about three months, and then I think I was a month on the third ward again, and then I think four months night-watch again, and then on the third ward, and from the third ward I think that time I went to the first ward.

Q. And where then?
A. I remain there now on the first ward.

Q. State what the facts are about these patients going out to wash?
A. Well, there are women go to the laundry at different times; sometimes there are three or four go at a time, and then again they are changed and others go.

Q. State what the fact is—did you or anybody else compel these women to go?
A. No, sir.

Q. What is said to them?
A. Well, I say come, naming them, come to the laundry, and while if they come right along it is all right, and if they say they do not want to come, they do not go.

Q. What do you say to them if they say they do not want to go?
A. I say come you had better go.

KATE BRINK.

Q. Suppose they say they won't?
A. I never do any thing further.

Q. Do you ever compel them?
A. No, I do not.

Q. Did you inflict any punishment for not going?
A. No, sir.

Q. Or any restraint?
A. Not at all.

Q. Any force of any kind?
A. No. sir.

Q. Has it been done at all since you have been there?
A. Not to my knowledge, and I have not heard it talked of?

Q. In your various rounds in those wards have you seen in the wards or out of the wards any patient struck, or kicked, or choked?
A. No, sir.

Q. You did not have anything to do with the male wards?
A. Oh, no.

Q. Do you take these females out to exercise?
A. Certainly.

Q. The female attendants do that?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Are they taken out to ride—these patients?
A. Often.

Q. Who does that?
A. Well, Dr. Mathewson.

Q. How are they taken out?
A. They are taken out in carriages.

Q. When?
A. Most generally on the Sabbath.

Q. Whose carriage drives them out?
A. Very often Dr. Mathewson's. Always when they go, his carriage goes and the other carriage, I do not know who owns it, but sometimes Mr. Taylor's small carriage.

Q. Do they take out more than one load on Sunday?
A. Oh, yes.

Q. They give one set a ride and then another set a ride?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. See if you can call to mind any choking or striking with a doubled fist, or with the flat of the hand, of any patient by an attendant during all of this time you have been there?
A. I cannot remember one instance.

Q. Have you heard of an instance?
A. I cannot recall one.

Q. Where did you come from here?
A. Oshkosh, Wisconsin. My home is in Vineland Wisconsin.

Q. You came from that Asylum here?
A. I was at home five months before I came.

Q. And you were there about two years?
A. Two years and nearly two months.

Q. For kindness and humanity and gentility of treatment, how are these patients treated as you have seen them during your experience compared with those in the institution you left?
A. Favorably.

Q. What do you mean by favorably—better?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. In what respect?

A. One thing I noted first was the fare—food.

Q. How was that—better?
A. It was of better quality, and more of it.

Q. And what next?
A. Well Dr. Mathewson was more attentive than Dr. Kepter—he had charge of the Wisconsin Institution.

Q. In what way more attentive?
A. Well, he did not trust so much to the Assistant Physician—he visited the wards oftener.

Q. How in respect to the intercourse between the insane and the Superintendent. Was it more family like?
A. Yes, it was more like all one family; it was more homelike.

Q. How has been the Doctor's treatment to those unfortunate insane; has it been gentle, kind and patient, or has it been harsh, imperious and cruel?
A. No, sir; not cruel. He is firm but kind.

Q. Does he ever lose his temper?
A. No.

Q. Did you ever see them provoke him, that is doing such things as insane people sometimes do?
A. I suppose he has been provoked, and has had patients violent and very troublesome.

Q. And sometimes have they spit in your face?
A. Yes, and kicked and bit.

Q. Did you ever know him to strike a patient or use any violence on them?
A. No.

Q. Sometimes those insane people are pretty provoking?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. I will ask you what is the practice in other insane asylums so far as your experience goes about the ladies from the first wards, or convalescents going out to wash?
A. I know that a great number went to the laundry at Oshkosh,

and to the sewing and to the kitchen; that is, the officers' kitchen. I do not remember any going to the general kitchen.

Q. Some of these insane people are happy in the wash tub and like to wash?

A. Yes, they like to work; they seem as much interested in it as though it was their own.

Q. Like it as in civil life some like one thing and some like another.

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Senator Connor.

Q. Is this Miss Brink or Mrs. Brink?

A. Mrs. Brink?

Q. Do you say you do not remember a single act of neglect or cruelty of Nebraska Insane Asylum since you have been connected with it?

A. I don't with my knowledge.

P. And that has been about five years?

A. Nearly.

Q. Have you heard of acts of neglect or cruelty?

A. Well, I hear of it talked of about these men; I never heard these incidents talked of in the house.

Q. Did you ever hear of it talked about by the women?

A. No.

Q. Did you ever hear the women talk about bad treatment?

A. O, there are patients who complain of being ill-treated in every way and there is nothing right.

Q. Is it not a fact there is a great deal of complaining in this Insane Asylum?

A. No, I think not, except patients that have a mania this way.

A. As a matter of course your duties are entirely separate from the male wards?

A. Entirely.

Q. Are you in a different ward in the house?

A. Yes, sir; entirely.

Q. Are you much acquained with the male side of the Asylum?

A. I suppose not much different, from the rules.

Q. Did you ever hear of any acts of cruelty there?

A. I heard that an attendant was discharged for cruelty there. I do not know that I may have heard of more than one.

Q. But in these cases you have heard of, it was where they were discharged?

A. Yes, sir; that is all.

Q. Did you ever hear of the male patients being kicked?

A. No.

Q. Nor beaten by the hands or fist?

A. No; I may have heard I do not remember of any particular instance or on any satisfactory authority.

Q. The Doctor, you say, never gets out of humor?

A. Well, I have never seen him display any ill-temper.

Q. Have you had female night watches in the female wards?

A. I think we have all. the time except the first I remember was last spring when the night watch was sick, and for a time there was not any night watch.

Q. There is a night watch now?

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. During the five years you have been there, have you heard of a single circumstance from which you could form an idea that fault could be found with the care that patients receive there?

A. No.

Q. Suppose you should be discharged, what kind of a story could you make up conscientiously to tell that would cast any reflection on the conduct of the officers, or thetreatment of the patients at the Hospital if you should go to work to think up something you could tell, or, in other words, can you possibly conceive how any one can get up any idea that the patients are not well treated from your experience of five years?

A. No, I cannot.

(Signed.) KATE BRINK.

Testimony of Sarah Gilmore.

Sarah Gilmore sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your age?

A. Twenty-one.

Q. What is your occupation?

A. Attendant.

Q. Were you the attendant with Miss Sisson at the time the night watch was sick?

A. I was.

Q. You were lodging with her?

A. I was.

Q. Do you remember the Doctor coming up into the ward—Dr. Mathewson.

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was he there more than once?

A. Yes, sir; he used to come in frequently to see that everything was right, when we had no night watch.

Q. Was that at the time the night watch was sick?

A. It was.

Q. State in your own way what occurred and what he did when he came in?

A. Well, I do not remember the circumstances just as they were and in case he heard a noise or any disturbance in the ward, he would go in and see what the disturbance was.

Q. Do you remember a night when he came in en dishabille; that is, with his pantaloons on and his suspenders unbuttoned?

A. I did not see any such occurrence.

Q. At the time he came in was there an old lady sick in the ward that was not expected to live?

A. There was.

Q. Do you know whether he went to her room or not?

A. I think he did.

Q. Was a patient a screaming in the ward at the time?
A. There was.

Q. Did he go to the room door. Tell it in your own way just what did happen?
A. I really do not remember that circumstance well enough to tell it.

Q. Do you remember his coming into the room where a young woman who was hysterical screamed?
A. I remember some such circumstance.

Q. What was it?
A. Well, I believe he went to the room and told her to hush her noise.

Q. Well, did she hush her noise?
A. I think she did.

Q. How long was he in the room?
A. I don't remember, but I think but a moment.

Q. Was there any night watch on duty at the time?
A. There was not.

Q. Was there any occasion of his being there?
A. No other one.

Q. Do you remember Annie Erickson?
A. I do.

Q. Do you remember the circumstance of the Doctor being there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What took place?
A. The Doctor came in one evening after we had locked up, or I supposed we had, but by some mistake her door had been left open, and she ran out and she ran to the Doctor.

Q. What did he do?
A. Well, he caught her her and put his hand under her throat. I don't think he choked her.

Q. Why do you think he did not choke her. Where were you at the time?

A. I was standing close by.

Q. How close?
A. I was within reach of the lady and hold of her.

Q. Was you in front of her, back of her, or by her side?
A. I don't remember.

Q. How long did he hold his hand on her?
A. Not more than two seconds.

Q. Did he seem to choke her or did she seem to be choked?
A. No, I did not think he choked her.

Q. She rushed towards the Doctor and he put his hand up, is that the way?
A. That is the way.

Q. He put his open hand on her throat?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did she do then?
A. She struggled, of course, and we had quite a time getting her back into her room.

Q. What did she struggle for, and what did she want to do. Was she trying to get away from the Doctor, or to him?
A. Was trying to get to him.

Q. Did she object to go back into the room?
A. Some.

Q. Did you assist in getting her back into the room?
A. I think not.

Q. What did the Doctor say to you?
A. He said he could probably manage her.

Q. Just give his language?
A. I cannot do that.

Q. As near as you can?
A. I think that is just as near as I can. He says "probably I can manage her."

Q. How long have you been in that Asylum?

A. I have been there almost eleven months.

Q. On which ward?
A. On the second.

Q. On the second ward all the time?
A. With the exception of two days.

Q. Where were you then?
A. In the first ward.

Q. This occurrence you have just been narrating—on which ward did this occur.?
A. On the second ward.

Q. During that time have you ever seen an attendant strike a female patient?
A. I have not.

Q. Have you seen an attendant choke a female patient?
A. No, sir.

Q. Have you seen anybody kick a patient?
A. No, sir.

Q. Have you known of a patient being slapped with the open hand?
A. No, sir.

Q. By an attendant?
Q. No, sir.

Q. Do these patients sometimes have a litle quarrel among themselves?
A. Very often.

Q. Do they strike?
A. Yes, sir; often.

Q. With the fist or open hand?
A. Just most any way.

Q. Now during the time you have been there, state frankly if you have ever seen any act of cruelty on the part of any officer or attendant of the Asylum towards a patient?

A. I have not.

Q. Have you ever heard of any patient being struck, kicked, or hurt by an attendant?

A. No, sir.

Q. When did you go there?

A. I went there the 17th of last March.

Q. And where were you from there?

A. I was from Morning Sun, Iowa.

Q. Have you ever been in any Asylum before?

A. Yes, sir; I was five months in the Hospital at Mt. Pleasant, Iowa.

Q. What place did you have there?

A. I was an attendant there.

Q. On which ward?

A. On seven and two.

Q. They have more wards there than we have here?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How were their wards graded—as you go up in numbers they grow more insane?

A. No, sir.

Q. Which ward did they have their worst patients on?

A. On seven, eleven and three.

Q. That is Mt. Pleasant Asylum.

A. Yes, sir; number two is the middle ward.

Q. How long were you on seven?

A. About six weeks, I think.

Q. How long were you on number two?

A. The rest of the time.

Q. Now tell frankly, how for gentility, humanity and kindness, how the treatment of the attendants and officers in this Asylum compared with the Mt. Pleasant; tell it frankly and candidly, if it is worse, say so?

A. So far as I have seen the attendants have treated the patients just as well here as they did there.

Q. You attend at dinner, do you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How about the food?

A. I think the food is better here than at Mt. Pleasant.

Q. How about this matter of washing, if you know about it in the Mt. Pleasant Asylum, do they send or do some of the patients go to the wash-room?

A. I do not know; no patients ever went from my ward, and I do not know of any other.

Q. Have you had charge of this ward mostly alone since Miss Sisson left?

A. Yes, sir; most of the time, with the exception of a few weeks.

Q. Who was your assistant then?

A. There was a lady by the name of Miss Griffin on the ward, and Miss Shively was on the ward with me about six weeks. I don't know just how long she was there, perhaps two months altogether.

Q. And the balance of the time?

A. Miss Byers was with me a short time, I think about four weeks.

Q. How long ago did Miss Sisson leave?

A. She left there the seventh of August or July.

Q. Of this past year, 1882?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And since that, except the time mentioned, you have charge of the ward alone in the daytime?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Has there been a night watch most of the time?

A. Yes, sir; most of the time. I don't know how long we were without a night watch.

Q. Why, were you without a night watch?

A. Well, because there was no one suitable in the building, and they couldn't find one when the night watch was sick.

Q. What became of her?
A. Well, I don't know, but I believe she was discharged.

Q. And then there was a time when you did not have any?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. These patients sometimes are pretty provoking, arn't they?
A. Yes, sir; often.

Q. Do they bite?
A. Yes, sir; when they have an opportunity.

Q. And strike?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And spit?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And have you got bites on you?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. They are pretty provoking sometimes, arn't they?
A. Yes, sir; they are very provoking.

Q. Will you show your hand where you are bit?
A. It is almost well now, anyway.

Q. Now, you say you have never known of a patient being struck by an attendant?
A. No, sir; I never have.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. Do you remember of a female patient by the name of Kaufman?
A. Yes, sir; I do.

Q. How long since was she in the Asylum?
A. I don't know; she has been there a number of years, I think.

Q. Is she there yet?
A. No, sir; she is dead.

Q. Do you remember when she died?
A. Yes, sir; about six weeks ago.

Q. How long was she badly sick before she died?

A. Well, about six or seven weeks.

Q. You went for the Doctor for her several times, didn't you?
A. I reported her case to the Doctor.

Q. What did you report to the Doctor?
A. I reported she had some very bad sores.

Q. Did you suggest medical treatment?
A. I did not.

Q. Did the Doctor come up and respond to your statement about her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Promptly?
A. I think so.

Q. Is it not a fact that you reported that case to the Doctor several times?
A. I spoke to the Doctor and Mrs. Mathewson several times.

Q. Is it not a fact that he did not respond when you spoke about it?
A. I believe he said that there could not be much done for her?

Q. Is it not a fact that he did not respond and go to see her?
A. He came to see her, yes, sir.

Q. Did he go every time you spoke of the case or suggested?
A. I think he did.

Q. Don't you think there was neglect of that patient so far as the medical treatment is concerned?
A. Well, I do not think there was; her case was hopeless.

Q. You say that you do not know that was; don't you believe that there was a neglect of that patient?
A. No, sir; I don't know that she was neglected.

Q. By the failure to attend her personally, didn't you go for Dr. Mathewson and solicit him to come and see himself to Mrs. Kaufman?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. Were you there when she died?
A. I was.

Q. Who else was there?
A. I was the only attendant there.

Q. Was there anybody about when she died but yourself?
A. No, sir.

Q. What time did she die?
A. She died about 6 o'clock in the evening.

Q. How long before she died, to your knowledge, had it been that Dr. Mathewson had been there?
A. Why he had been in the room that afternoon.

Q. Did he go to see her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he prescribe for her?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you know she was dying?
A. Well, we thought so.

Q. At the time he was in the room before?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. When had he been there before that—when had he seen that patient before that?
A. I don't remember.

Q. She had been in a critical condition for some time?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know of what disease she died of finally; what was the cause of her death?
A. I do not know; well, it was her insanity, I suppose, just wore her out.

Q. Was she much emaciated?
A. Very much so.

Q. Now, you say that you didn't go for the doctor and solicit him to come and see this patient, Mrs. Kaufmann?
A. No; I think I simply told him of the case.

Q. Do you remember what you said to him, or about what was said?

A. I told him I thought she needed some attention—that is I thought she needed something for those sores.

Q. Was anything prepared to put on those sores?

A. Not for a few days.

Q. Was there finally anything put on?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who put it on?

A. I did.

Q. How long after you told the Doctor that she needed something for the sore on her breast was it before the medicine was furnished to go on these sores?

A. Well, perhaps, three or four.

Q. Was the patient suffering much during her last sickness?

A. Well, I think she was, although she was not conscious of it.

Q. Was she demented and bereft of her reason; was her mind all gone, or was she conscious and intelligent enough to understand?

A. I think she was.

Q. All the time or part of the time?

A. Not all the time, but towards the last.

Q. Where was she buried?

A. At Omaha.

Q. Was this patient from Omaha?

A. I think she was.

Q. Now, you say that the reason that there was not a female watch upon the ward was because you couldn't get a watch or an attendant; how do you know that fact?

A. I do not know it, but I have heard that was the reason.

Q. But you do not know it; do you?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now, you say you never have seen any act of cruelty or neglect in that Asylum?

A. No, sir; I don't think I have.

Q. Do you now testify to the female patients exclusively, or do you mean generally, male and female?

A. With regard to the male patients I know nothing at all.

Q. Now, these poor creatures that kick and strike and bite, are the insane people that are confined for insanity?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you can not expect anyhing else from them?

A. Well, no, I suppose not.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Long before that woman's death, did not my wife go and give special care to the patients and give special care to that patient, and if every attention was given her that you could give to make her comfortable, and did she not have a special attendant most of the time during her last sickness?

A. Mrs. Mathewson did pay a great deal of attention to Mrs. Kaufman.

Q. Both in regard to her treatment and food, and prepared such things as were possible to take care of her bed sores and so on?

A. Yes, she did take a great deal of attention of her.

Q. Didn't we try to give all the attention and have an interest to have everything done for her to make her comfortable as we could do?

A. I think you did.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. When was it when Mrs. Mathewson took a special interest in the patient?

A. After she was confied to her bed, Mrs. Mathewson was very attentive.

Q. From that time up to time of her death?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What attention did you give her?

A. I gave her all that I could, and don't think she wanted for anything that I could possibly give her.

Q. Was there any neglect in that case?
A. I think not.

Q. Didn't she have special night-watches a portion of the time?
A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. And you would do that with any patient?
No, sir: whenever they are sick, the attendants, some of them, sat up with them.

(Signed) SADIE GILMORE.

TESTIMONY OF MARY PASSMORE.

Mary Passmore sworn.

By Dr. Mathewson:

P. How long have you been in the Hospital?
A. Four months and twenty days.

Q. Have you been in other institutions of this kind?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. At what place?
A. Mt. Pleasant, Iowa.

Q. How long were you there?
A. Fifteen months.

Q. What kind of a ward were you on?
A. On eleven and three, two of the violent wards, a portion of the time.

Q. How does the attention given to the violent wards here compare with Mt. Pleasant, the attention of the officers and the attendants, and the general care of them?
A. I think the general care is quite as good as it is there, and the ventilation is much better.

Q. Can you say that the patients here are in any manner neglected?

A. No, sir; they are not.

Q. Can you see in any way that they could be made any more comfortable?

A. No, sir.

Q. Are they made comfortable at night?

A. Yes, sir; they are.

Q. They have beds and clothing, and have you heard me express any special care?

A. Yes; I have heard you say that we could not be too charitable to these patients. You have said that more than once to me.

Q. Has there been any appearance of neglect or cruelty on the part of the officers towards the patients?

A. No, sir.

Q. Have you seen any special attention and solicitation in regard to their being made comfortable so far as possible?

A. Yes, sir; day after day.

Q. In regard to the food, did they have a plenty of food?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do they have as good food as they had in Iowa?

A. Much better.

Q. Can you think of any mean thing that you could say if you tried in regaad to the care and attention of these patients

A. No, sir; I do not.

Q. You were there for a time when we had no night-watch?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Can you understand how it was that we did'nt have any night watch?

A. I understand that there was no one suitable for the position.

Q. Was there any person about the building that could be spared for that purpose?

A. No, sir.

Q. As soon as we got new persons so that you could be spared off the ward, were you put in the night watch?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know of any suffering on account of there being uo night watch?

A. There was no one.

Q. Do you know that I was constantly looking after the wards on account of having no night watch?

A. Yes, sir; you were on the night watch frepuently, and I was called up three or four times at night.

Q. Did you complain to me that you were broken from your rest so much that you would have to quit work?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What reply did I make to that?

A. I don't remember.

Q. Well, in regard to getting you relieved, I mean as soon as possible?

A. I believe that you said that as soon as you could get suitable help, you would have a night watch.

Q. Have I ever inquired of you if you knew of any help that you thought you could get?

A. Yes, sir; and I think I recommended you to one.

Q. Do you know whether I corresponded with one?

A. Yes; I believe you did.

Q. Do you know what was the reason we did'nt get her?

A. Because the letter miscarried, but I know that we expected day rfter day.

Q. Have you ever seen a person misused on that ward?

A. No, sir; I never have.

Q. How many patients have you on that ward?

A. Forty-nine, I believe; we have had fifty-two.

Q. How many patients are there that you have to take right into the bath-room as quick as they get up in the morning?

A. I have had six or seven.

By Seuator Connor:

Q. As a matter of course, your knowledge is confined to the female wards?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You know nothing of the management or control of the male department?
A. No, sir.

Q. And you have been there four months and twenty days?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You may just state what is the duty of the night watch.
A. To start around at eight o'clock after the locking up is done, and try every door, and see if there is water.

Q. But do they remain up all night?
A. They do from eight in the evening until quarter after six in the morning.

(Signed), MARY E. PASSMORE.

TESTIMONY OF ROSA SMITH.

Rosa Smith sworn.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. How long have you been at the Hospital?
A. Four months and about two weeks.

Q. On which ward?
A. On the third ward; on the violent ward.

Q. During that time, have you seen any neglect of the patients by officers or attendants?
A. I have not

Q. Have you seen any abuse by officers or attendants?
A. No, sir.

Q. From your knowledge of taking care of the patients, can you see in any manner that we could treat them any better?

A. I do not.

Q. Is it your openion that we have taken special care and we do all in our power to treat these patients well?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How does the care of these patients compare with hospitals you have been in before?

A. I have been in the Mt. Pleasant Hospital, and think this is just as good and feel satisfied this is just as good as the Mt. Pleasant.

Q. Is the clothing of the patients carefully attended to?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And their cleanliness?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And food carefully attended to?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And no one is allowed to suffer if it is possible to prevent it?

A. No, sir.

Q. Are they restrained with such care and attention as it is possible to do with those that we are obliged to restrain?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How many are there that we are obliged to restrain largely, part of the time to keep their clothing on, or keep them from hurting others or themselves?

A. There are times that we have to restrain, I should think, a dozen, at least, in order to keep their clothing on.

Q. If you should be discharged from that institution and you wanted to say the meanest thing you could about the institution, what would you say?

A. I should say that they are were good to their patients, but overworked their attendants.

Q. But you say the officers and attendants were devoted to the patients and did all in their power to make them comfortable and never abused them?

A. I never saw any abuse.

Q. Have you ever had any special instructions from me in regard to your duties there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What were they?

A. To treat the patients kindly and with charity.

Q. Have you ever heard me make any special statement in regard to what we ought to do, all of us, and everybody about the institution, in regard to the care of the patients?

A. I heard you say that we should treat them as we ourselves should wish to be treated, and you have spoken different times of the care that we should take especially on putting them to bed that they are comfortable during the night.

Q. From what you have seen about the institution and the officers and attendants, and the care and interest taken in the patients, can you see any possible ground for anybody to complain about it?

A. I cannot.

By Senator Connor:

Q. You have been there a little over four months?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You have no knowledge of the treatment of the male patients, have you?

A. No, sir.

Q. How many female patients are there in the Asylum?

A. I don't know, but there are about forty-nine on my ward, and mine is the third ward—the violent ward.

Q. Do you know anything about the management of the other wards, personally?

A. No, sir.

Q. You know simply of your own ward?

A. Simply of my own ward.

[Signed.] ROSA SMITH.

Adjourned.

Testimony of L. F. Taylor.

L. F. Taylor; aged 38; residence, Insane Asylum.

Was appointed in 1879 as steward of hospital. Did not know Dr. Mathewson before. Have a knowledge of all the finances of the institution; have handling of all the money that comes to the hospital; have the oversight of all outdoor work, farm, garden, etc. The means I have of judging of the management of the Asylum is by what I see of the patients when out for exercise, and patients at work, etc.; have no business in the wards only as a visitor; go on wards when I desire to do so; I have been instructed by Dr. Mathewson to not allow any abuse of the patients by the attendants, in the way of over work, harsh words or harsh treatment, and he has instructed me to prevent any accidents. When I want men to work on the farm I usually go to the assistant physician—must go to either Dr. Mathewson or the assistant physician for the order—the purpose of giving this order is first, that you know the men who are suitable to work. One day a man may be able to work, next day he may be what we call off too much; second, so that the management may know who is out and who they are with. I give the same instructions to the men under whom the patients are at work. I am careful to give such instructions, and where I see abuse of instructions, report to you. I have never seen any disposition on the part of Dr. Mathewson to disregard these rules, and the reports I made to him in regard to treatment received by patients on the outside. Dr. Mathewson has always expressed a disposition that the patients be treated well under all circumstances, and he has commanded us to bring patients to hospital when we could not get along well with them. Dr. Mathewson has always expressed a desire that patients be treated well under all circumstances.

Saturday evening, Feb. 17, 1883.

L. F. Taylor recalled for further examination.

Questioned by Mr. Mathewson:

Q. Have you ever heard me talk about the difficulty of getting suitable help to take care of the wards?

A. Yes, I have heard it often.

Q. Have you frequently known it when I had a limited amount of help too small to get along really and do justice to the patients?

A. Yes, I have heard you say at times that you had not such help as you would like.

Q. What do you know about our being in need of help there at different times?

A. I have known you to be short of help, first in one department and then in another, and heard you make the remark that it was very difficult to get help to fill the place.

Q. What has been the appearance of watchfulness in regard to taking care of this help, and keeping them close to their duty?

A. I should call it very close.

Q. What has been the condition of discipline in regard to help?

A. Rigid.

Q. Have you ever seen any disposition to shield any one for misconduct in regard to patients?

A. No, I have heard you say that you had help in your employ that did not suit you, and as soon as you could fill the place you should make a change.

Q. To what extent have all the resources available of the institution been devoted to the care of the inmates?

A. It has been applied in accordance with the law, as far as it would go. Of course their appropriations are governed by legislation, and they can only be used for the particular purposes for which it was appropriated.

Q. To what extent have the resources been used for the comfort of the patients?

A. I think that all available resources have been used.

Q. For the amusement of the patients?

A. The amusement fund has been used exclusively for the benefit of the patients.

Q. To what extent have the resources been used for the purpose of taking patients to ride, for instance?

A. They have used the farm teams sometimes when it was rather done under protest. When they worked the team all the week they hitched them up, to drive them on Sunday, to take the patients out.

Q. On an average how many patients have you been able to take out to ridewhen the weather was suitable?

A. Well, I have kept an account some days Sundays, and I think I have taken as many as forty out with one team, and very often we would have two teams. I know that once or twice I kept an account, that we took out forty for a ride of two or three miles.

Q. Have you ever noticed that I took them out with my private team?

A. Yes, quite often, and since you have had a private team, we have not used the state team as much for that purpose.

Q. What means have we used to obtain money for the purpose of giving comforts to the patients, and of helping to defray the expenses?

A. You have taken in patients from the outside at an advanced rate over the actual cost of keeping, from the territories.

Q. About what amount of profit do you estimate that you gain now from the keeping of patients not belonging to the state?

A. Well, I think it is about double. I think they pay about double the cost of the keeping of them.

Q. And that gives us how much a week profit?

A. It is giving us now, with the number of patients we have, about $50 a week profit on the patients that we have in there.

Q. That is about 2,500 a year?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What becomes of this money?

A. It is turned into the cash account and expended for what is most needed. Where the appropriration runs short on any one fund, this is drawn on for incidental purposes.

Q. Do you know how it happened these patients were taken in and for what purpose?

A. They were taken in for the purpose of helping out the finances; I believe you told me they made application to have them kept there. That is the way I understood it.

Q. With your means of operation upon the outside, if there had been very much abuse, do you think you would have been likely to have seen something of it?

A. I think so. If I did not see such things, if it had been going on, I surely would hear of it.

Q. Do you believe your chances of observation have been as good as of any person about the Institution to see what is going on on the outside?

A. Of any person outside of the wards—any person outside on the ground, I think so.

Q. To what extent, if any, have you seen abuse?

A. I cannot remember of any abuse that I have seen directly myself, any more than I have seen attendants who were disposed to act a little harsh and arbitrary, and I think I have spoken to you about some attendants that were disposed to be harsh, but as to abuses, kicking, striking, and knocking, I cannot remember of ever seeing but one lick struck.

Q. Can you recollect the circumstances of that?

A. It was a patient running away, and the attendant caught him. He was on a run almost to the barn, and I was standing out where I could see him, and when the attendant caught him the patient resisted, and he tried to pull him back, and they were about of equal strength, and finally the attendant got behind him and shoved him up with his boot. As near as I could see, he struck him once or twice with the side of his boot, and I went to him and told him he should be careful. And matters of that kind, when I saw them I should report them.

Q. Did you consider it of enough importance to report?

A. No, sir; because he did not hurt the man.

Q. It was merely the appearance that you were protesting against?

A. Yes, sir, and there were visitors with me that saw it, and they made some remarks about it.

Q. And during the time that you have been there, it is a little over three years?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And having an opportunity to see better than any other man on the outside of what is going on in the Institution, you never have seen a blow or kick except the instance you speak of?

A. I cannot remember of any, I have heard them talk of where they had trouble, but I cannot remember of seeing any, I have been trying to study it up.

Q. Did you ever hear of these charges or see them in circulation, or similar charges by Mr. Druse two years ago?

A. I do not know who the charges were in circulation by, but I saw a set of charges that were in the hands of some of the Senators two years ago. They were handed to me by Mr. Cropsey.

Q. What did you do with them?

A. I handed them back to him. He handed them to me and asked me if I knew anything about the matter. And I glanced over them and told him I did not. And it was something I knew nothing of.

Q. Have you ever observed or heard me talk about the trouble and difficulty of getting along with the patients during the time the workmen were employed around the building in the construction of the new wings? State what you have observed.

A. My observation has been that the patients were more noisy, and disposed to be more annoying in a great many ways, when there were outsiders around the building than at any other time.

Q. Have you ever seen these people talking with the patients?

A. Yes, I have seen them quite frequently talking through the windows; the parties on the outside and the patients on the inside.

Q. Have you noticed that you have had considerable trouble in that respect, to keep the laborers away from the patients and not to interfere with them?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you known them to hand things in to the patients?

A. I have known of instruments being brought out in the ward that were found with the patients, and supposed that was the way they secured them. I never saw them hand anything into them, but I have seen some dangerous instruments brought out.

Q. Now from your acquaintance with me, and my conduct about the Hospital, and my instructions to all attendants, and my own dis-

position, as you have seen it, have you ever seen anything that you could torture into the idea that I was disposed to be cruel to the patients.

A. No, sir.

Q. And has exactly the opposite of that been true in your mind?

A. I thought that you have had so much interest in the patients that you sometimes have been more harsh with your help than is necessary. We have talked that matter over.

By Senator Connor:

Q. How many rooms have you in the Asylum, that is how many patients can be comfortably quartered at the Asylum?

A. Well, there are about 300 there now. And with the present room, from what I heard the doctor say, it is well filled up. I never have been through the wards after the patients were in bed since I have been there.

Q. Is it not your understanding that the Asylum is over-crowded now?

A. It is full; but if it is overcrowded, I don't know it; I have not heard complaint of that kind.

Q. By what authority do they take patients from Wyoming?

A. By the authority and consent of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings; I have never heard the Board of Public Lands and Buildings say so, but that is my understanding of it.

Q. How many are there from Wyoming and other Territories?

A. Seventeen.

Q. Don't you believe as a matter of fact, that the Asylum is sufficiently crowded for room without patients from the outside?

A. Such room as our State patients occupy, I think it is; but if you will allow me to explain, the quarters that the Wyoming patients have, and the class of patients, I think you will understand it better. Two years ago the Legislature appropriated a certain amount to complete the basement of the building, which was about half enough. It was intended to complete the basement so that it would be suitable to care for the patients in and make a ward of it. That money was expended so far as it would go, and it left a portion of

it unfinished, and the money that we got for the keeping of these Wyoming patients, there has been a portion expended in providing temporary quarters in the basement, and the class of patients being kept from Wyoming are what the doctors call chronic cases; they are quiet and harmless, and but little bother, so much so, that a great many are allowed the freedom of the grounds.

Q. What are their quarters?
A. They are the basement rooms of the buildings.

Q. Are there any Nebraska patients in the basement rooms?
A. A few of the same class with them.

Q. Do you know what is charged the Territory of Wyoming for taking charge of these patients per week, or per month?
A. Yes; $6.00 for board and care; $7.00 if this State furnishes the clothing; without clothing, $6.00 per week.

Q. That includes medical attendance, etc.?
A. Yes, sir; $6.00 includes all, aside from the clothing.

Q. How do you account for the fact that when the Asylum is short of help, and it is difficult to get along with the patients that you have from our own State, that you took in this large number of patients from a neighboring Territory?
A. Well, as short as we have been of funds on some of the appropriations, if it had not been for this extra money we would have to come before the Legislature for the dificiency.

Q. Are you athorized by the Legislature to do this?
A. No; I think not.

Q. Has the Legislature ever failed to appropriate the necessary amount of money that you have asked for, for the running expenses of the Institution?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How much has it fallen short?
A. This year we are short some $3,000 for coal.

Q. On estimate that you have made?
A. Yes, sir; they cut down the estimate and did not appropriate the amount asked for.

Q. Is it your idea, that in order to make that up and to help the State out of this matter, that you have taken in a lot from some other Territory?

A. I think, perhaps, that if you would ask the Doctor these questions, he could answer them better, because it is part of the Doctor's business; I have only to keep the accounts.

Q. But that is your understanding of it.

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, you say that the Doctor uses his private team to take the patients riding on Sunday?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Does the Doctor furnish the provender for that private team, or does the State do it?

A. The State furnishes the provender for the team. He has one colt that he has raised from the team, for which he pays.

Q. But this team the State takes care of?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And he used this team, his own team, on Sunday, that the State takes care of, to take patients out riding?

A. Yes, sir,

Q. Don't you regard that as a part of the necessary exercise to give the patients, to take them out riding?

A. I don't regard it as anything wrong.

Q. Is is not the design of that Institution to relieve the mind?

A. I think so.

Q. And to give varied experience and pleasure to the mind?

A. I think so; but the State has not furnished the means of doing that fully.

Q. Now, you say that you have never seen much abuse there. Do you remember of seeing a patient stricken on the head with a brickbat?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you remember of hearing of that occurrence?

A. I have heard it talked of by the Doctors when they were inquiring into it.

Q. When was that?
A. It was lately that I heard of it.

Q. Since the inquiry commenced?
A. No, sir; since I came back from the vacation I had.

Q. Then they did refer to somebody being stricken in the head?
A. I never heard of the brick-bat, but I heard of them having some trouble with a patient in the yard.

Q. Did you ever hear of a patient by the name of Palmer being knocked down and kicked on the ground?
A. Nothing, except what I have heard in the testimony.

Q. Did you ever hear of a man who was attempting to go to the barn, and the attendant desired him to go in another direction, and that the patient insisted on going towards the barn, and of his knocking him down and kicking him?
A. No, sir; I never heard of that.

Q. Did you ever hear of a patient who went and took hold of a hoe where they were mixing mortar, and one of the attendants taking the patient and taking him out in the yard a little distance and knocking him down and sitting upon his body?
A. I never heard of that; I heard they had some trouble with a patient there.

Q. You, as Steward, about that Institution, are generally engaged on farm and purchasing groceries and necessaries for that Institution?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Pretty largely so?
A. I am usually in town about one-third of the time, I think.

Q. And a great many of these things might occur and you never know anything about it?
A. Yes, sir; they might occur.

Q. Did you have in your employ, or did Dr. Mathewson have, a man by the name of Nelson?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was he recently discharged?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was the occasion?

A. He was not attending to his business, and I asked the Doctor to discharge him. He tried to have more business in town than out there.

Q. What was the difficulty; in what did he fail to attend to his business?

A. When we sent him to town, and he had business over here, sometimes he would be gone half a day, and since this investigation has been started, he came over to town a time or two without any permission, and without saying anything about it, and he rode to the State House once, and I told the Doctor that I had no further use for him at the barn, because he was not doing any good.

Q. Had he neglected his business up until the commencement of this investigation?

A. He had not been a very energetic man.

Q. Still you had no reason to discharge him?

A. When you have a lot of work around to be done, it is not always that you have help that satifies you in every particular. He did reasonably well in many respects, and in others he did not. One complaint I had was, we had considerable stock around the barn and had to be up early, and had forty cows to milk, and I would often go to the barn and find him in bed, but he filled his place in other respects pretty well.

Q. He was usually a pretty good man?

A. In most respects he was.

By Judge Mason:

Q. I desire you to state if you have charge of the effects of Mr. Lawson, who died at the Asylum?

A. I have charge of the money, part of it.

Q. Anything else?

A. No sir, the other effects are not in my care.

Q. How much money is there belonging to Mr. Lawson?

A. There is a balance of six cents in his favor.

Q. Have you got his account?

A. Yes, sir; but I have not got it with me.

Q. Has any body ever asked you for it?
A. I gave the Doctor a statement of it.

Q. Did any body ever call on you for his effects?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did any body ever speak to you for his effects?
A. No, sir.

Q. For a book?
A. No, sir; not that I can remember of. I don't remember of its being mentioned to me.

By Mr. Kendall:

Q. Do you know how much the last legislature cut down from your estimate on the appropriation for living expenses?
A. I don't know whether I can remember or not, but I can find the estimate that was made and know how much was appropriated, but it was quite an amount.

Q. Was it three or four thousand dollars?
A. I think it was $4,000.

Q. Can you state to the Committee what your estimate was based upon; how much per meal and day?
A. It was based on the cost the previous year with the calculation of the number of patients that would be admitted in the coming two years, at the ratio that they had been coming in previous to that. I think though that it was about fourteen cents a day for the board.

Q. Do you mean per day or per meal?
A. Per day; I believe that is correct.

L. F. TAYLOR.

Testimony of Will H. Green.

Will H. Green sworn:

By Judge Mason:

Q. What is your age?
A. Twenty-five years.

Q. What is your occupation?
A. Painter.

Q. Whereabouts do you live?
A. In Lincoln, corner of Twelfth and D streets.

Q. Are you engaged at the Insane Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long have you been engaged there?
A. I have been there, it has been three years; but I have been there steady the last two; the first year off and on.

Q. What part of the Institution have you been in?
A. There is not a part about the building I have not been in more than once.

Q. What portions of the time have you spent in the various wards in the Institution?
A. Two-thirds, if not more.

Q. What were you doing on the wards?
A. I have done most everything pertaining to my occupation.

Q. You were painting?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You painted the wards?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you state to the Committee if you saw any acts of cruelty on the part of the attendants towards the patients?
A. No, sir; I never saw any.

Q. You may state if you have seen an attendant strike or kick a patient?

A. I have seen on two occasions a tussle in self-defense where the patient would strike first. I have seen this Mr. Lawson strike at the attendant with a mop or broom-stick.

Q. Mr. Lawson?

A. Yes, sir; he came at the attendant and struck him, but he caught the stick before it fell, and then Lawson struck the attendant, and the attendant struck him back, until he could get assistance and restrain him.

Q. When was that?

A. That happened, I think it will be three years next June.

Q. How long was that before Mr. Lawson died?

A. Well, I don't know that I can tell the exact date that he died, but I think he has been dead about eighteen months, but perhaps not quite so long, or maybe longer.

Q. Did he leave any marks upon Mr. Lawson that you noticed?

A. No, sir; I did not notice them.

Q. Was Mr. Lawson a violent patient in that way?

A. Yes, sir; he was considered so; yes, sir.

Q. Did you see the patients when out for exercise?

A. Not very often, because I am mostly in the building. I may see them through the window.

Q. For the last two years what has been your means of observing the treatment of the attendants and the officers of the Asylum towards the patients?

A. I think my opportunity is about as good as the Institution affords.

Q. Have you seen any acts on the part of the attendants or officers that could be tortured into an act of cruelty?

A. No, sir.

Q. Have you seen any patients neglected?

A. No, sir.

Q. Had such things occurred were your opportunities such that you would have seen them?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, you say you live in Lincoln ?

A. I do now, and have been for the past year, before that I spent my time at the Hospital entirely.

Q. You are a man of a family ?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Where do you live ?

A. Corner Twelfth and D streets.

Q. How long have you lived there ?

A. About seven months I think.

Q. Do you know a patient by the name of Anna Erickson ?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What treatment have you observed in respect to her on the part of the attendants or the doctors ?

A. I have seen her on the hall several times; she has come at me; and I have been on the hall when the Doctor has been called to restrain her.

Q. What was the Doctor's manner toward her when he was called to restrain her ?

A. He locked her to a seat and put straps around her; and locked her fast, or put her in the room and locked the door.

Q. State his manner in the treatment of that patient if you were to describe it to a stranger ?

A. If it was the Superintendent she would resist; she would walk along if they had hold of her sleeve oftentimes, but if it was the Assistant Physician or Superintendent she would resist.

Q. How was the Superintendent's manner; was it kind and gentle, or forcible and violent ?

A. It was kind and gentle.

Q. Now I will ask you, during all this time, if you ever observed that the Doctor's manner to be any other way than that towards the patient ?

A. Nothing but kind and gentle in all my observation.

By Senator Connor:

Q. Your business, you say, was mostly on the inside of the building?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. I did not understand what you said you were doing there
A. Painting.

Q. You are not an attendant?
A. No, sir.

Q. And your means of observation were confined to the inside of the building; to the ward of the building?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And that being the fact you could not tell what occurred? and what went on on the outside?
A. No, sir; I could not.

Q. You could not see outside?
A. No, sir.

Q. These patients might have been abused on the outside and you not see it?
A. Why, such a thing could happen.

Q. What time did you quit work generally?
A. Well, I quit work in time for supper, and supper is at 6 o'clock and oftentimes a little later.

Q. And since you have been living in Lincoln, I suppose you came away from the Asylum at that hour?
A. Yes, 6 o'clock is the standard time.

Q. And you came home and would not see the Institution again until you went back the next morning?
A. No, sir.

Q. What time did you get back?
A. I went back in time to get to work at 7 o'clock in the summer, and in the winter at perhaps half past seven.

Q. You never saw a man stricken in the head with a brickbat?

A. No, sir.

Q. You never saw a patient kicked ?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear of such a thing out there ?
A. Not until I heard this testimony.

WILL H. GREEN.

TESTIMONY OF T. M. CONNELLY.

T. M. Connelly sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason.

Q. What is your age ?
A. I am thirty-seven.

Q. Your occupation.
A. A carpenter.

Q. And have you been at work on the Insane Asylum ?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. From what time to what time?
A. Since the 26th of last April, I think.

Q. Are you there now?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And on what part of the institution have you worked?
A. Well, in the institution and outside, too.

Q. I think it was Mr. Burns who testified to a circumstance of a patient being thrust into a seat, did you see that transaction ?

A. I was on the ward four or five weeks ago, and there was a patient unruly, and Mr. Burns told him to sit down. He would go in the way of the swab, and stop the man who was running the swab.

Q. That is what they were mopping the floor with ?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Oiling the floor?

A. Yes, sir; and Mr. Burns told him two or three times to sit down, and he would not, and he started away from Mr. Burns, and Mr. Burns walked after him, and he was ahead of the man with the swab, and Mr. Burns overtook him at the head of the hall and sat him down in a seat.

Q. What was the manner of sitting him down?

A. He sat him down gently, and Mr. Burns turned his back to the patient and came back where I was, and the patient jumped up and caught Mr. Burns and jumped on his back, and put his arms around under his chin, and they both fell on the floor. A patient by the name of Bonyer sat him in his seat, and Mr. Burns went to the patient and caught him by the coat-collar and talked to him a few minutes; he looked in his face and talked to him.

Q. Did he strike that patient?

A. No, sir.

Q. He got down in front of him and talked to him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he kick him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did he throw either of the patients violently into the seat?

A. He did not.

Q. Can you fix the time of it?

A. It was about five weeks ago.

Q. Was Mr. Hollenbeck there?

A. I didn't see him.

Q. You didn't see him at that time?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever mention that circumstance to Dr. Mathewson?

A. No, sir; not until lately.

Q. That was, you think, about five weeks ago?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Is that about five weeks ago now?

A. Yes, I think so, as near as I can tell.

Q. You think this circumstance was about five weeks ago?
A. I think it was about five weeks ago.

Q. What has been your means of observing the treatment which the patients had received from the attendants during the time you have been there?
A. It has been very good, I think.

Q. Now you may state what has been the treatment of the attendants towards the patients while you have been there?
A. It has always been kind since I have been there; as far as I have seen they have always treated them kindly.

Q. How in respect to the treatment of patients by Dr. Mathewson and his manner towards the patients?
A. He is always kind towards the patients and always speaks kindly to them. I have not seen him treat them any other way but speak and treat them kindly, since I have been at the institution.

Q. How was his manner as to his diligence, and state whether he does or does not take an interest and what interest in the welfare of the institution and the patients?
A. I think he takes a great interest in their welfare, and sees that they are not abused, etc., and sees that they are well taken care of.

Q. How long have you lived in Lincoln?
A. Since the 12th of last March.

Q. Where did you live before?
A. Before that I lived near Valparaiso, in Saunders county.

Q. How long have you lived in the state?
A. I came to the state two years ago last November.

Q. You may state what you heard Hollenbeck say in respect to Dr. Mathewson, and how and under what circumstances?
A. Well, some six or eight weeks ago the Doctor, I believe, found some fault with the work.

Q. With whose work?

A. Mr. Hollenbeck's work on the new wings—with the work he was on.

Q. Was that work for the Asylum?

A. It was on the new wings that are being built, and I spoke to Mr. Hollenbeck, and made the remark that the Doctor didn't like that work, and he made the remark, and he said: "No, and he had better tend to his own business and keep his mouth shut, and he knew some persons were waiting for some persons to start the ball rolling and they would all take a hand in it.

Q. How long ago was that?

A. I think it was about two months ago, perhaps not quite so long.

Q. Now, I will ask you did you observe this work with which the Doctor found fault?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was there occasion for finding fault with it?

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Senator Connor.

Q. You went there in April?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Are you a married man?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Is your family there?

A. No, sir.

Q. Where does your family live?

A. In Lincoln.

Q. Is it your habit of going out there in the morning and returning the same day?

A. Yes, sir; I return in the evening.

Q. You are not there after night?

A. No, sir.

Q. What time do you get there?
A. About seven o'clock.

Q. What time did you quit?
A. About six o'clock.

Q. And you go away then?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who are you working for?
A. For the State, I suppose.

Q. Well, somebody has a contract?
A. No, sir.

Q. You are working on the Asylum building?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. The new part or the old part?
A. The old part.

Q. Are you the repairer of the building?
A. Yes, I am there to do the repairs.

Q. And keep the repairs in order?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now you say that you saw an occurrence there about three or four weeks ago?
A. About five weeks ago.

Q. Now describe where that occurrence took place?
A. In the third lower ward.

Q. What time in the day?
A. It was in the forenoon, I think; I would not be positive, but it was in the forenoon, I think.

Q. Was there any patient in the ward at that time?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How many of them?
A. I could not tell.

Q. About how many?
A. Twenty-five or thirty.

Q. Where was this patient when Mr. Burns took hold of him and sat him gently down into the seat. Where was this patient with reference to the other patients that were in the ward?

A. Well the patients were all along the sides of the hall sitting down.

Q. Was this patient sitting down—the one Burns took hold of?

A. He sat him down.

Q. Had he been sitting down before?

A. He was walking in front of the swab and Mr. Burns told him to sit down and he would not do it.

Q. Were these patients up and down the ward; some sitting, and some standing?

A. They were about all sitting, but this man was getting in the way of the swab.

Q. They were nearly all sitting down, and this swab that you speak of was to oil the floor, and he would go along in front of that?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was there anybody else along in front of that?

A. Nobody but what would get out of the way.

Q. How many were there along there that would get out?

A. I cannot tell, but this was the only man that would give any trouble.

Q. Have you any recollection of about how many were up and in the way there?

A. No, sir; I could not tell. This is the only man that I heard Mr. Burns speak to.

Q. And he sat him down gently?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was Burns operating this swab, or was he just there as an attendant?

A. He was an attendant.

Q. You swear, do you, that you never saw any mistreatment of men in the wards of the institution?

A. No, sir; I have never saw any mistreatment of any patients since I have been there.

Q. Now by mistreatment do you swear that you never saw a patient misused by any of the attendants?
A. Yes, sir; I never saw it.

Q. Sometimes your occupation causes you to work on the outside of the building?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How much of the time?
A. I think I spend about two thirds of the time in the house.

Q. And about one-third out?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. When you were in the house, where was your work, in the halls or in the wards?
A. In the wards and in the halls and in the building all over.

Q. Sometimes you are in the halls and sometimes in the wards?
A. Yes, sir.

T. M. CONNELLY.

TESTIMONY OF WILLIAM STATZELL.

William Statzell sworn.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson.

Q. What time were you employed in the Hospital?
A. To the best of my recollection I went there in March, 1880, and I think I left there the latter part of July, or the first of August of the same year.

Q. Were you in attendance on the ward all of the time?
A. Yes, the third male ward only.

Q. Who was on the ward with you as an attendant?

A. Well, there were two or three different parties while I was there—a man by the name of Eastman when I first went there.

Q. Do you recollect having trouble with a patient by the name of Lawson?

A. Yes, a patient from Lincoln, by the name of Lawson—I remember such a person.

Q. Just relate the circumstance connected with the case. What happened, how it happened, and what the trouble was. Was Mr. Lawson a violent patient?

A. Yes, he was one of the worst patients we had on the ward.

Q. Was he a very robust and strong man?

A. Yes, he was a large man and a stout man.

Q. Was he regarded as the strongest man on the ward?

A. I regarded him as such at the time; yes, sir.

Q. Relate the circumstances of the trouble?

A. There was trouble between him and some other patient. At that time the ward was considerably torn up in repairing and there was some workmen had been there fixing the bath rooms, and such places as that, where we kept mops and buckets, and they got in there and he got into a fuss with some other patient, and he had a mop-handle and they got to fighting together and I interfered and tried to get the mop-handle from him. I happened to be on the ward alone at that time, my partner on the ward was down to his meal at that time I think, and know that when I interfered he turned on me and we had a scuffle together there, me and him.

Q. Did you succeed in getting the mop-handle away from him?

A. I did finally, yes sir.

Q. When you got the mop-handle away then what happened?

A. Then it was quieted finally.

Q. Did he strike at you?

A. Yes sir. He struck at every one that came near him; me and the patients and every one else.

Q. Did he drive you into the corner?

A. Yes sir, and I hit him when he did that. I thought if I didn't I perhaps would be killed.

Q. You thought you were in close quarters?
A. Yes, I knew I was.

Q. And you had blows back and forth.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he get a black eye?
A. Yes; he got a black eye.

Q. Was that the only time he ever had a black eye while you were on the ward?
A. Yes: I think it was, to the best of my knowledge.

Q. What was his physical condition at that time?
A. Well, he was very stout, physically.

Q. Before you left, did he become demented?
A Yes; very much so, before I left.

Q. Was this change gradual?
A. Yes, sir; he just gradually declined.

Q. Was there any immediate or marked change in his condition at any one time, when you were there on the ward?
A. No, sir; not immediately or suddenly.

Q. Did he ever talk much?
A. At first he was always talking and singing; he never talked in English, he could not speak English, I guess, if he could he did not; I never could understand what he was trying to say.

Q. Did you observe any particular change at that time in that respect?
A. No, I did not.

Q. Why did you hit him?
A. To protect myself, of course. I hit him to keep him from hitting me.

Q. Did you see any abuse of patients by attendants while you were on that ward?
A. I never saw anything that I called abuse.

Q. Did you see anything that looked like abuse, by the officers of the Hospital, while you were there?
A. No, sir; I don't think I did.

By Judge Mason:

Q. You were the attendant there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you ever kick those patients?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever see any body kick them?
A. No, sir; only kick at one another.

Q. Did you ever see the attendants kick them?
A. No, sir.

Q. You have seen the patients kick at one another?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you ever see the attendant strike a patient with a double-fist, except in the case you have mentioned?
A. No sir, I never saw but the one instance, and then I did'nt strike him with my doubled-fist.

Q. Did you ever see the attendants slap them or chug them in the breast with their fists?
A. No, sir, I never did it at all.

Q. I asked you if you ever *saw* it at all?
A. Well, I will say no.

Q. Did you ever see an attendant thrust them down into a seat?
A. No, sir.

Q. Now you may state if you had any special instruction from the Doctor in regard to the treatment of the patients, and if so, what it was?
A. Well, I had special instructions frequently, as much as twice a week, I should think, to read over our by laws, and he would place marks on certain clauses in regard to using violence towards the patients, and such as that; and he gave us distinctly

to understand that no such conduct would be tolerated whatever.

Q. You are not to use violence?
A. No, sir; I remember a clause which he frequently marked.

Q. Would you know it if you should see it?
A. I think I can repeat it: That no attendant shall be excused for inflicting a kick or blow on a patient, except in case of self defense. He has called my attention to that time and again.

Q. Have you seen any unnecessary cruel treatment?
A. No, sir; not unnecessary cruel treatment.

Questioned by Mr. Connor:

Q. How long were you there?
A. To the best of my recollection, about six months.

Q. Were you confined to the third ward—your services?
A. Yes; to the third male ward.

Q. Did you leave there of your own will?
A. I did.

Q. Have you been living in Lincoln since that time?
A. Not all the time.

Q. Now, you say you never saw a patient hit in the breast or hit in the face enough to hurt them, except in that one instance?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you seen them hit with the fist?
A. Not by an attendant; no, sir;

Q. What did you mean when you said, that you had not seen them hit enough to hurt them?
A. Well, I have frequently taken hold of patients, one hand behind and one in front, and set them down in a seat. I never saw them hit with the fist in the breast or in the face at all.

Q. How much were you on that ward?
A. I had, I think, while I was there, as much as four different men on the ward with me.

Q. Was Eastman there?
A. He was there when I first went there.

Q. Do you know of Eastman ever abusing the patients?
A. No, sir; he only stayed three weeks after I went there. He was discharged.

Q. You heard that he did abuse the patients?
A. No, sir.

Q. You never heard that?
A. No, sir.

Q. About this man Lawson, where did you strike him in the face?
A. I think on the nose.

Q. Right on the nose?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember whether it left any scar on his face or not?
A. I don't think it did.

Q. How positive do you feel about that?
A. I know it did'nt break the hide, but it colored his eyes. I think it was my lick that colored his eyes.

Q. Both of his eyes?
A. Yes, sir; underneath his eyes.

Q. You mean the eye lid?
A. Yes, sir;

Q. Were both of his eyes alike?
A. I cannot speak clearly about that, but I think they were about the same.

Q. How was it about being bruised along down on the side of the face?
A. It was not bruised.

Q. You did'nt bruise that?
A. No, sir.

Q. How was it about having a cut on the side of the cheek in the region of the ear. You did'nt do that if he did have it?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. After you had this altercation with Lawson, did he complain of having a head-ache?

A. I stated before that he did'nt speak English. I don't understand the Swede language.

Q. If he did complain you did'nt understand, did'nt understand by his actions that he complained of it whatever. He did'nt appear to complain from his actions?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now then, in point of fact, you did'nt think you hurt him much?

A. No, sir; I don't think I hurt him much.

Q. Did the attendant come to your assistance in that difficulty?

A. No, sir.

Q. You handled him by yourself?

A. I was on the ward alone. My partner, I think, was down to his meal at that time.

Q. You are a very nice trim made gentleman, and you did'nt have much trouble handling him; he was a pretty strong man, you testify.

A. Well, yes; I had trouble to handle him; yes, sir.

Q. If you ever saw any large black bruises on the face or jaw, you never did that?

A. No, sir.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Did you observe any such wounds on Mr. Lawson, while he was there?

A. I don't think there were any wounds on Mr. Lawson, except a black eye while he was on that ward.

Q. How long before he took sick and went to his room did this occur; did they take him away while you were there?

A. No, sir; he didn't take sick and go to his room while I was stayed there; I think I was there five months after this occurence.

Q. Did you fix the time when you went there?
A. No, sir; I think it was in March, 1880.

Q. And you left about five months thereafter?
A. Yes, or six months thereafter; I think I left in the latter part of July or the first part of August.

WM. STATZELL.

TESTIMONY OF MISS CORA SEELEY.

Cora Seeley sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason.

Q. Where do you live?
A. I live in Lincoln now.

Q. Have you been an attendant at the Insane Asylum for Nebraska?
A. I was there about five weeks, I think.

Q. When did you first go there, as near as you can tell?
A. The 8th of September.

Q. When did you leave there?
A. I don't remember the date, but about five weeks after that.

Q. What year was that?
A. This last year, 1882.

Q. What other institution for the insane have you been an attendant upon?
A. I have been an attendant at the Center Hospital at Jacksonville.

Q. How long were you there?
A. About six years in all.

Q. In what capacity were you there?
A. I was an attendant on the convalescent ward, and I was dressmaker.

Q. How long were you an attendant on the convalescent ward?
A. About four years and a half.

Q. What ward were you in at the Nebraska Asylum?
A. I was attendant there for the convalescent ward, number one, the first week, and I was dressmaker the rest of the time.

Q. What was your means of observing the treatment which the patients received from the attendants while you were there?
A. Well, I had my ward, and then I was there all the time, and when I was dressmaker I had access to the other wards at any time in the day, and frequently I had to try on dresses, and my business called me up there.

Q. It called you through the various wards very often?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You were trying on dresses for these patients and making dresses for them?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you state what the treatment and manner of the attendants towards the patients in the Nebraska Asylum was; was it harsh and mandatory, or kind and persuasive and gentle?
A. They had a very good class of attendants, but very limited in number; they had very few attendants when I was there, but they were always good and kind, and a very superior class of attendants.

Q. How would the treatment of these patients by these attendants, as observed by you, compare with the treatment of the patients in the other Asylums which you were in for six years?
A. Why the treatment was about the same, I should think; I think Dr. Mathewson is a little kinder than any Superintendent I have met with; I can say that because I think he was.

Q. In what way; you say kinder, explain what you mean by that?

A. Well, when I went there they had just discharged an attendant for being cruel to the patients, and I think her husband left because she was discharged; I forgot how it was, but, anyway, Dr. Mathewson did night duty all the time I was there, and that was something I never heard of a Superintendent doing in all my life, and it does not seem that he would countenance much cruelty when he would discharge an attendant and do their work beside his own work.

Q. Did you observe his manner towards the patients—the Doctor's?

A. Yes, sir; he was always gentle and kind and firm; of course he had to be.

Q. Do you know who took charge of the third ward after the discharge of this attendant you spoke about, or those attendants?

A. Mrs. Mathewson had charge of it, the most disagreeable ward in the house; it was work, with my six years' experience in a hospital, I could not do; and she did it, and for some weeks afterwards.

Q. You say Mrs. Mathewson had charge of it; state what Mrs. Mathewson's treatment of those unfortunate inmates was, as you observed it?

A. She has always been very kind, very firm, of course an attendant has to be very firm.

Questioned by Senator Conner.

Q. You, in point of fact, was only in the asylum as an attendant for about a week?

A. I was an attendant one week and the rest of the time I was dressmaker.

Q. One week would be a pretty limited time in which to form a judgment of how any institution of that kind was managed?

A. When I was dressmaker I had from ten to twelve patients with me all the time.

Q. But one week would be a pretty limited time in which to form an opinion of an institution of that kind?

A. If had only staid there one week—

Q. But I mean the ward management?

A. I had access to the wards all the rest of the time; I saw more of the ward life after I went into the dressmaking room than while I was on the ward.

Q. Would not one month be a pretty short time for an expert to make up her mind as to the management of an institution of that kind?

A. I had no reason to suppose that they were all specially kind while I was there.

Q. But would it not be a short time in which to make up your mind?

A. I don't think so.

Q. What did you see of the treatment of the male patients at the Asylum?

A. I had nothing to do with them.

Q. Did you see anything about it?

A. No, sir.

Q. You didn't make up your mind on that department or the management.

A. I had nothing to do with that.

MISS CORA SEELEY.

T. M. Connelly, recalled.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. State, if you remember, those attendants being discharged, and what they were discharged for?

A. I think it was four or five months ago, that Dr. Mathewson sent for me and I went into the office, and he said they had some re-

pairs to do on the third female ward, and he went on the ward with me, and Mrs. Mathewson was on the ward doing the work, and the Dr. explained to me that the afternoon before there was a woman unruly on the hall and he put her into the room and locked her up, and he came down to his office and just then he saw some visitors coming up and they were looking up toward the third ward, and he stepped to the door to see what attracted their attention, and he heard a noise that he thought was not altogether right, and he went into the third ward and went into the room and found attendants abusing a patient, and he said he discharged them. He said it was bad enough for them to be locked up, and before he would have them locked up and abused, he would open the door and turn them out.

Testimony of Mrs. Dr. Mathewson.

Mrs. Dr. Mathewson, sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your name?
A. Mary Sanborn Mathewson.

Q. You are the wife of Dr. Mathewson?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You live at the Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember a lady, a Mrs. Kaufman, who died at the Asylum?

A. I think I have great reason to remember her. I remember her distinctly.

Q. Now, I wish you to state particularly the circumstances in relation to that woman; the treatment she received, why she received it, and all the circumstances, and who she was, and if a relative or intimate friend?

A. Mrs. Kaufman was the wife of Frank Kaufman, who died in Omaha. He kept a livery stable, and at the time of his death we

were living in Omaha, and he was not a very wealthy man—but Mrs. Kaufman took the home that was left her and improved upon it by calculation. She took boarders, and in one way or another, she increased her property until her rents, at the time she came to the Asylum, Mrs. Doane or some other lady friend told me, and Judge Doane was the guardian, her income was about $200 a month. She was an old citizen and had been highly respected for years before this affliction. She did many things she was censured for in Omaha, and after this affliction had become thoroughly known, it was called insanity that caused her to do these things that she had done, and, of course, all the community in Omaha greatly respected her. She was taken first to a private asylum in Illinois—I don't remember the name of the asylum, but I know Dr. Patterson had charge of it, and he brought her there to our Asylum, and said she was an incurable patient and they didn't care to keep her, and her friends had wanted to move her to the Nebraska Asylum—and her aunt, Mrs. Twayne, who lived in Council Bluffs, was very careful to speak about her having attention. We had known her during the time we lived in Omaha—ten years—and for that reason we gave her just as good care as we possibly could have given her if she had been our own child or my sister or mother. In the state she was in she could not have had better care.

Q. Now, you may state what attention you gave this woman in the last days of her sickness.

A. We gave her a private attendant.

Q. Who was it?

A. Miss Shively.

Q. Where is she now?

A. I don't know; but she went to her home; I don't know where her home was, but Dr. Mathewson can tell you. She had a spring bed and hair mattress, and feather pillows. We had soft blankets and everything that could make a sick person comfortable, and I visited the ward once or twice a day, and carried her meals to her, a few weeks before her death, for two or three weeks, every meal she took, I prepared and fed it to her with my own hands.

Q. How about the attention that was given to her nights, just previous to her death?

A. She had special attendants that cared for her, and kept close watch of her, I suppose. I didn't go into the wards at night, but she was cared for constantly night and day.

Q. Did you visit her every day?
A. Yes, sir; I don't think I missed a day.

Q. What was the condition of her mind during her last illness?
A. She had entirely lost her mind.

Q. Now about the sores. Do you know the name of the disease? I don't know whether you do or not, but if you know it state?
A. I think it was paresis, and she had bed-sores, which always follows in those cases, as I understand it.

Q. How do you know it was paresis—from whom did you learn it?
A. I could not tell you—I always understood it was that.

Q. Did you understand it was that before she was brought there? I don't know anything about it, but she had what was called bed-sores?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were they pretty extensive on her body before her death?
A. There were three; one on each hip and one at the extremity of the spine. I think they are always located at the same place. I have seen a great many people die having bed-sores.

Q. You don't mean to die of bed-sores?
A. But they have them on when they die?

Q. State how long before her decease did these sores make their appearance?
A. I cannot tell; but several weeks, and I saw them I think, every day after they appeared, and dressed them myself several times, and her attendant I have seen dress them, when I didn't dress them.

Q. You visited her for what purpose?
A. To see that she had the very best care, and to know that positively.

Q. Who did you say was her guardian?
A. Judge Doane, of Omaha.

Q. Was she taken to Omaha for burial?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who came for her?
A. No person.

Q. You may state, if you remember, how she was sent there, and under what direction?

A. I don't think I know about that. Mrs. Doane told me when she came there, that when Mrs. Kaufman died she would like to have me prepare her for the grave, "just as you know Mrs. Mathewson, Mrs. Kaufman ought to be prepared." I did it, and I suppose it was perfectly satisfactory.

Q. You may state why you went on to the third ward?

A. I went on the third ward when Dr. Mathewson discharged an attendant for cruelty, and her partner was persuaded to leave, I dont know why, but I suppose just out of spite. She thought if she left the ward alone, he would be perfectly blocked. It was just ugliness in her, and Doctor came down stairs and told me that the ward was alone. There were forty-six patients there, and the worst ward in the house. Of course I had my husband's interest at heart enough to go up there, and I stayed there and took care of that ward alone for ten days with the exception of the night watch, who came on the ward at four o'clock in the afternoon, with the exception of slight assistance from one of the attendants on second ward for a few days.

Q. Now, state if you were in that ward every day?
A. Yes, sir; every day.

Q. How many hours each day?

A. From the time the bell rang for the patients to rise in the morning. I stayed there until about nine o'clock in the evening.

Q. Did you kick or cuff any person?

A. No, sir; I never touched a patient in any way, shape, or manner to harm them and they never offered to me, out of the forty-six.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. You say that Mrs. Kaufman had an attendant?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who furnished the attendant?

A. Suppose they paid for it. Dr. Mathewson expected Mr. Doane to pay for the patient's attendants.

Q. Was this private attendant one of your attendants?

A. No, sir; Dr. Mathewson hired her for an attendant, and she thought the work was too hard, and Dr. told her would hire her for a private attendant.

MARY SANBORN MATHEWSON.

TESTIMONY OF THOMAS JORDAN.

Thomas Jordan sworn.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. How long have you been on duty in the third ward?

A. Except twice, once fifteen days, and the other time three weeks, about the 14th day of September, a year ago; I have had two short vacations.

Q. Is all the time that you have been on fifteen days at one time?

A. I have been off of the ward fifteen days; I have been in the Asylum eighteen months, and have had two vacations.

Q. How many different attendants have you had with you on that ward during that time?

A. I believe fourteen.

Q. Have you ever seen Mr. Burns take a patient up and throw him into a chair?

A. No, sir.

Q. From your acquaintance with the man, do you believe he ever did such a thing as that?

A. No, sir.

Q. What was the character of Mr. Burns in his treatment of the patients?

A. Very kind.

Q Did you ever see Mr. Burns strike an old man that looked as if he was just ready to go to the grave?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you recollect of seeing some trouble with Mr. Hedrick out in the yard?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you detail that circumstance just as you saw it, the time they took him away from the mortar box?

A. I was sitting near the watch window of the third ward, and saw Mr. Burns jump off the fence, and I went to the window and looked out, and saw Mr. Christner holding Mr. Hedrick, and they had a tussle and laid him down on the ground, and held him until he gave up.

Q. Did they strike him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did they kick him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did they choke him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did they hurt him any?

A. I should not judge they did.

Q. Did they sit on him and put their knees on him?

A. I did not see it.

Q. Did you consider they were doing anything more than they were obliged to?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. Where did that occur?

A. It occurred at the mortar box at the north end of the building.

Q. Can you recall about the time?

A. No, sir; I do not.

Q. This was at which end of the building?
A. At the north end of the building.

Q. How far from where the men were at work at the mortar box did this occur?
A. Perhaps they led him three rods.

Q. Do you remember another time when Mr. Ryma took a brick to strike the attendant?
A. Yes; we had called the wards to go into the building and Mr. Ryma started to go out, and Mr. Christner went to fetch him back, and he refused to come, and Mr. Christner caught the patient and pushed the patient up a little, and he came along until he got to the brick, and then he took a brick and turned around to strike Mr. Christner, and Christner turned around and threw him to the ground. I took him by the collar and helped him to his feet, and he went into the ward and went and washed himself.

Q. Did you catch him by the heels and throw him over onto his back?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever see any body do any such trick as that?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did any body strike him with a brick-bat?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever see a man struck with a brick-bat?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever see an attendant strike a patient with any kind of a weapon?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see some trouble with Palmer out in the yard?
A. I saw some kind of trouble down in the lower end of the yard, and I went down and saw there was some trouble with Mr. Palmer.

Q. Did you see any abuse of Mr. Palmer?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever see Mr. Palmer have fits, and they would be obliged to take him in out of the yard?

A. I think I have.

Q. Have you at different times, when you have been out in the yard, seen men fall in fits, and the attendants take them and carry them in?

A. Very frequently.

Q. Did you see them struggle frequently?

A. I saw them have struggles sometimes.

Q. How many epileptic patients have you in your ward?

A. I believe I have ten.

Q. Are these patients violent patients?

A. Most all of them violent patients. I judge I have twenty or twenty-five patients that at times are violent.

Q. Do they get into fights among themselves?

A. Almost every day.

Q. Do they ever attack the attendants?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In the time you have been on this ward, have you seen men assault the patients?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or strike them, or injure them in any way, except in self defense?

A. No, sir.

Q. Have you seen these patients out in the yard, abused in any manner?

A. No, sir; never.

Q. Have you seen the patients take a club and try to it the attendant?

A. Not in the yard, as I know of.

Q. Have you seen them catch up bricks or stone?

A. I saw Mr. Ryma take one.

Q. Has your attention ever been called to the necessity of treating patients kindly and attentively?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you ever called me up in the ward, at night?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did I come quick?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did I come as quick as you did?
A. Yes, sir; always.

Q. Without stopping to dress.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was the occasion?
A. A man choking.

Q. And you had no difficulty to get me up there quick?
No, sir.

Q. Have you ever seen me in the ward early in the morning, and the first thing you knew, you would find me in there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. At different times in the day?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And what did you apprehend I was there for?
A. To see what you could see.

Q. Did you ever know me to go up in the attic after the men were in bed.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you ever know me to call you up, and examine the men and see if they were as comfortable as possible during the night?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you observed that I was always vigilant on that ward, and saw that everything was done for the patients that was possible to do?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And cautioned the attendants against any rudeness?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you seen any neglect in any manner by Dr. Hay or myself?

A. No, sir.

Q. Have you ever seen any circumstance on that ward that has ever been brought to my notice, that I was not ready and anxious to correct, and to discharge the person who committed any abuse, if it was brought to my notice?

A. No, sir.

Q. Have you ever talked with me in regard to the manner in which patients should be treated?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What have I ever said about treating patients well?

A. You would generally refer us to the by-laws, and told me to read them, and read them to me.

Q. I have brought them to you and read them, and what certain points directed you to do.

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Has that been frequent?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have I inquired when new attendants came on the ward how they treated the patients and performed their duties?

A. Yes, sir, almost always.

Q. Have you ever known a patient to be neglected in the Institution?

A. No, sir, never.

Q. Have you ever called for anything that was necessary for their comfort, but what I have at once brought on whatever was called for, if it was possible to get it?

A. No, sir.

Q. Have you ever known me to take clothes off from my own bed and take them out?

A. I don't know about that—but I have known you to fetch clothes out, but whether they came from your bed I cannot say.

By Judge Mason:

Q. What has been the manner of Dr. Mathewson and the officers towards the patients and the attendants?

A. Very kind.

Q. And in their intercourse with the patients, has it been harsh and rough and imperious, or has it been kind and gentle?

A. It has always been sociable, as they would be with sane people.

Q. How has been their requirements—I mean Dr. Mathewson from the attendants; what has been his requisition of them in their treatment of the patients?

A. Always treat them kind, and do all that laid in their power to make them comfortable.

Q. Have you ever seen any patient struck with the fist by the attendant?

A. Not unless it was for self-protection.

Q. I will ask you if you have seen an attendant strike a patient with the fist?

A. I have done it myself.

Q. Did you ever see any one else do it?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you strike him in an angry manner?

A. No, sir.

Q. Tell us whom you have struck, and when and where.

A. I was cornered in the room once by a man by the name of Van Ostrand, and I tried to get out of the room, and in trying to get out, he got the door shut and then turned on me. He got me alone and I thought he was a better man than I was, and we had it, and I struck him and he struck me in the room.

Q. Any other case?

A. No, sir not that I know of.

Q. Have you ever seen a patient kicked by an attendant during the time you have been there?

A. No, sir.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. At the time of the occurrence with Hedrick, where were you?

A. I was at the north window in the third ward.

Q. How high up is that?

A. At the third story.

Q. In what wing?

A. On the north wing.

Q. How did your attention come to be attracted?

A. I sat near enough so that I could see Mr. Burns sitting on the fence, and I saw him jump off very quick as though something was the matter.

Q. Did he run right up there?

A. Well, he was there before I could draw my chair up so that I could see.

Q. Who was along side of Mr. Burns and the patient?

A. Mr. Christner.

Q. I mean outside of the attendant and the patient?

A. I think there was a man mixing mortar.

Q. Is that testimony? Do you believe that? Are you certain of that?

A. Yes, there was a man there mixing mortar.

Q. Was there anybody else there?

A. Not that I know of.

Q. What was this man doing at the identical time that Burns took hold of him?

A. He was struggling with Mr. Christner to get away from him.

Q. Did you see Christner take hold of him?

A. No, sir, I did not, but I saw Mr. Burns jump off the fence and run towards them.

Q. What did Burns do when they took hold of him?

A. They started him down into the yard.

Q. How far did they get him?
A. Two or three yards.

Q. Did he go along?
A. They pulled him along.

Q. Did they one go on each side and pull him along?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Didn't one get behind him and push him?
A. I don't remember that they did.

Q. Do you remember it at all?
A. I saw it.

Q. Do you remember how it was done at all?
A. Yes, sir, a man had hold of each arm and they led him down in the yard, and they got him down two or three rods.

Q. And then they got him down?
A. Then they put him down on the ground. He was struggling and making a noise, and they found they could not persuade him to go along.

Q. How did you know that—could you hear?
A. Well, I could see that they were having a struggle with him.

Q. But you testify that they couldn't make him shut up? Could you hear?
A. I could hear them talking.

Q. Did you hear what they said?
A. No, sir I did not.

Q. Was he talking back to them?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you get up out of your seat to look at this transaction?
A. No, sir.

Q. You didn't?
A. No, sir.

Q. You were sitting down in a chair?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How high are those windows from the floor?
A. They are not high as those here, (about eighteen inches).

Q. You could see it, could you?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Suppose this was the Asylum building, and you looked out there, where was the mortar-box? How far away from the wall of the Asylum?
A. Perhaps 75 feet.

Q. Seventy-five feet out from the wall of the Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And were they carrying mortar 75 feet into that Asylum?
A. I think so.

Q. Don't you know that that mortar-box was quite close up to side of the Asylum?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever measure the distance?
A. No, sir.

Q. You are not giving that from a measurement of it?
A. No, sir.

Q. You think it was about 75 feet?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you see them lay this man Hedrick down?
A. Yes sir.

Q. You saw the transaction yourself.
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How did they lay him down?
A. I don't know as I could just tell whether Mr. Burns dropped him down, or how they laid him down.

Q. Can't you remember?
A. No, sir, I don't remember.

Q. Do you think Burns dropped him down?
A. I think likely he did, but I cannot say for certain that he did.

Q. When they got him down, what was the first thing they did?
A. They held him down.

Q. Did either one of them sit on him?
A. I don't think they did.

Q. You could have told very easily if they did; that would be something extraordinary in a transaction of that kind, and don't you remember whether they sat on him?
A. I don't know whether they did or not.

Q. What did he do with his feet?
A. I don't know.

Q What did he do with his hands?
A. He didn't do anything with them; they had hold of him?

Q. Who had hold of them.
A. Mr. Burns had one and Mr. Christner had the other.

Q. Were any other one of the attendants holding his feet?
A. No, sir.

Q. How where they holding his hands; one on each side holding his arms out?
A. I think they were.

Q. And you say now that they never struck that man and never kicked him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And that was in full view of where you were sitting?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What time was this transaction that you speak about?
A. Well, they usually went out into the yard about two or half-past in the afternoon.

Q. I asked about what year was it?
A. This last summer.

Q. Do you know the man who was mixing mortar?
A. No, sir, I do not.

Q. Do you know anything about the man mixing mortar, saying something to the guards, and their coming back and talking to him?
A. No, sir, not that I heard it.

Q. Did you see one of the guards there, either Christner or the other walk back in the direction of where this man was?
A. No, sir, I don't remember it.

Q. Could you comprehend that they were talking together?
A. No, sir.

Q. You saw nothing of that kind?
A. No, sir. I heard after they came in that there were words between them.

Q. If you were sitting there you might have heard it?
A. I might have heard it.

Q. But you didn't hear it?
A. No, sir.

Q. How did you come to hear of that when they first came in?
A. I suppose Mr. Burns told me.

Q. How did Burns come to tell you?
A. Well, we almost always told each other of such trouble.

Q. Did you tell Burns you had seen it?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. That was not any extraordinary thing was it, to take a man down and hold him gently down in that way.
A. No, sir.

Q. It is no unusual thing for them to let a man down in that way?
A. Not if he is violent.

Q. Have you always told when you came in when you have taken a man down that way?
A. Very often.

Q. Is there any rule?
A. There is no rule about it.

Q. Did you tell Dr. Mathewson about it?
A. No, sir.

Q. You never said anything about it?
A. No, sir,

Q. Was this man Hedrick's face bleeding?
A. He was not on my ward, and I could not tell you.

Q. At the time they had him down?
A. I didn't see any blood.

Q. Did you see any dirt on the back of his clothes when he got up?
A. There might have been, I do not know.

Q. I am asking you if you saw any?
A. I did not, sir.

Q. How long did they have him down?
A. About half a minute.

Q. Did Hedrick hallo any?
A. Somebody was halloing. I do not know who.

Q. Who took him to the house?
A. He went to the house with the rest of the men, when he called the wards in.

Q. Neither one of the attendants went personally with him to the house?
A. No, sir.

Q. You never saw any violence there in that Institution at all?
A. No, sir.

Q. Any kicking.
A. No, sir?

Q. Any striking?
A. No, sir.

Q. No hitting with the open hand?
A. No, sir.

Q. But has been gentle and smooth, and everything glided along just as easily and as nice as could be?
A. It is not always.

Q. No harsh treatment one way or the other?
A. No, sir.

Q. The men patients are always treated gently as a case possibly allows?
A. As gently as the case possibly allows.

Q. Then how do you account for so many men being turned off?
A. Because they didn't suit the Superintendent.

Q. What did they do that they didn't suit him?
A. That is more than I know.

Q. Do they treat the patients harshly?
A. I didn't see them.

Q. You have testified that there were a great many turned off?
A. I do not know that they were turned off, but they go away.

Q. If it is so seldom you hear a noise, how does it come that any of these attendants are turned off?
A. I could not tell you.

Q. They are turned off?
A. Some of them are—I do not know.

Q. What became of this man Burns?
A. That is more that I can tell you.

Q. When did he leave the institution?
A. He left the institution the first day of this month.

Q. About the time the legislature sat.
A. I think he left the first day of the month.

Q. Of February or January?
A. Of February.

Q. Don't you know that Mr. Burns had a reputation of being a brutal man?
A. No, sir.

Q. Have you heard such talk as that?
A. I do not know that I have.

Q. Do you know that you have not?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You never have?
A. No, sir.

Q. Have you never heard it said that he was cruel to the patients on any of the wards?
A. No, sir.

Q. You do not know there was such talk about him?
A. No, sir.

Q. How long was Burns there?
A. I think he was there twelve months and two weeks.

Q. Did you ever hear Christner talked about as a man that abused the patients?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you always hear him talked of as a kind-hearted man, that never abused the patients at all?
A. I didn't hear him talked of scarcely at all. I am not out doors scarcely at all.

Q. Do you remember Mr. Searle?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember the difficulty that occurred with him?
A. I heard of it. I was not present at the time it occurred. I was either in Iowa or Lincoln.

Q. Do you know anything about the patient that had his ribs broken not long ago—Parks?

A. I saw nothing of it. I heard of it afterwards. I was in the building at the time.

Q. Do you generally go out with these patients when they go out to take exercise?

A. There are three of us, and sometimes I go out and sometimes the other two go out.

Q. Did you ever hear of a patient's being hit in the ear with a brick-bat?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear of a patient that wanted to go to the barn and the attendant wanted him to go another way, and he was beaten?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear of a patient being struck with the closed hand, except the one you have stated?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear of a patient being mistreated in the Asylum?

A. No, sir.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson?

Q. How did it happen that Mr. Burns went away?

A. Ever since he came to this country he intended to go into the sheep or cattle business, and he commenced in December to correspond with a gentleman in New Mexico in reference to Burns' going there to go into the cattle business.

Q. Do you know that he gave notice of one month?

A. He gave a notice of two weeks.

Q. Do you know that I tried to retain him there until after this investigation?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know that he refused to stay, on the ground that he had made an engagement that he could not well break?

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Mr. Kendall.

Q. Is it the custom of the Superintendent when men are discharged to inform the rest of the attendants the reason of the discharge?

A. No, sir; it is not.

By Dr. Mathewson.

Q. Were the men that were on the ward with you some of the men that were employed in the other wards and sent there temporarily, and thus were they all discharged that were on the ward with you?

A. No, sir.

Q. They had ben off and on to the number of fourteen.

A. Yes, sir.

THOMAS JORDAN.

TESTIMONY OF S. J. ALEXANDER.

S. J. Alexander sworn.

By Judge Mason.

Q. What office have you held for the last two years?

A. Secretary of State.

Q. You may state if Mr. Druse came to you at any time and made a proposition with regard to the discharge of Dr. Mathewson, and what was it?

A. Mr. Druse came to me at the Commercial Hotel one evening during the campaign this last fall and said that he would like to support me for the nomination for Governor, but the man that he supported would have to agree to one thing, and that was if he was nominated and elected, he would have to agree to the discharge of Dr. Mathewson from the employ of the Asylum.

C. B. Kelliher recalled.

By Dr. Mathewson.

Q. State if Mr. Hollenbeck didn't come down to your place to interview you in regard to this investigation and what he said. What proposition did he make to you?

A. He came over to my place and came in and spoke to me and said a few words and he asked if I was coming up in town the next day. This was on Friday and I said I was, and he asked if I wouldn't come up to the Capitol and make a statement of the things I knew about the Asylum. I told him that I didn't want to go there unless I had to, and if I went it would be in Dr. Mathewson's favor. I think I said that to him. Well, he says, I haven't come here to do you any harm. I have got into this thing and I'm going to push it along. Nelson has got his foot into it and his boy and Jim Leonard; "and," says he, "there is going to be a change out there and you might go and tell what you know. Dr. Mathewson isn't going to be there much longer anyhow, and it will give you a better show with the next Doctor." I told him four or five times that I didn't want to go and he rather insisted upon it and so we talked quite a little while about other things and he says, "See here, Con., I have not come here to make you any trouble in any way, and I expect to be a friend of yours and I expect to live here and whenever it comes in my way to put a dollar in your way I will do so." That is, I believe, the last word he said to me.

Q. Didn't you tell Mr. Hollenbeck there that you would not go unless you had to, and then if you had to, you would tell as little as you could, because your bread and butter depended upon your not saying anything, or words to that effect?

A. Well, I don't know; I might have said that.

Testimony of Charles H. Willard.

Charles H. Willard sworn.

By Judge Mason :

Q. State if you saw these charges that have been referred to against the conduct of the Insane Asylum two years ago, who had them, what became of them, and what you know about them ?

A. Two years ago, at the Commercial Hotel, I saw Mr. Ballentine reading some papers to Senator Harrington, and it transpired that I stopped there some little time, and after Mr. Ballentine left Mr. Harrington came to me and asked if I knew what those papers contained, and if I saw Mr. Ballentine reading them to him ; I said I did not ; he said they were charges against the management of the Insane Hospital, and that Mr. Ballentine had requested him to present them, and he asked me what he had better do about it, and I told him I wouldn't do anything.

Q. Is that all you know about it ?
A. That is all I know about it.

Adjourned.

Testimony of Henry Masterman.

Tuesday Evening, February 20, 1882.

Henry Masterman sworn.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit.

Q. What is your name, age, and place of residence ?
A. Henry Masterman. I was seventy the 3d of April.

Q. Where do you live ?
A. In Lincoln.

Q. How long have you been living here?
A. Ten years.

Q. What is your occupation?
A. I am watching at the post-office.

Q. How long have you been attending to that business?
A. A little over a year.

Q. What have you been doing before, and for a few years back?
A. I was attending the sick for the Odd Fellows and Free Masons.

Q. Are you acquainted with a man by the name of Hoffman, who had been in the Lunatic Asylum in this city, or near Lincoln?
A. Yes; I was with him when he died.

Q. You knew him?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What time was that?
A. It was four years ago this coming spring. I think he died in June or July—somewhere there—I am not certain.

Q. Four years ago last July?
A. This coming year; three years ago last June, I think.

Q. Do you know what his name was?
A. I do not know more than Hoffman.

A. Are you acquainted with his wife and family?
A. Yes, while I was there, and there was a daughter.

Q. What time was it you were there attending him?
A. I understood her he just came out of the Asylum, but I do not know how many days he had been out; I was with him about ten days before he died.

Q. What time was that in the month or year?
A. I cannot say; I think it was in June or July.

Q. Where was that—in Lincoln?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You may go on and state what you saw about him?

A. When I went there he was very low, and I noticed that he had a cut under his eye, a severe cut, and his eye was quite bunged up, I think it was the right one.

Q. Was the skin cut?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was the eye blue—that is, the eye ball?

A. Yes, sir, blue all around; he looked very bad, and I asked him how it happened, and she said it happened in the Asylum before he came out.

Q. Were there any bruises that you saw about him?

A. Well, his hands showed; he had his hands tied like this (indicating hands crossed at wrists), and you could see the marks of the cord, and on the upper part of the wrist, the cord had cut; there had been quite a cut there from the cord, and there was a scab on it at the time.

Q. Did you see any other marks or bruises on him?

A. Yes; there was a mark on his right side; I did not see it for two or three days after I was there; Dr. Leslie was attending to him; there was quite a bruise there, as if it had been done with the toe of a man's boot; I made that remark to Dr. Leslie.

Q. How was he otherwise—was he emaciated or in good health?

A. There was nothing of him hardly; he never eat anything all the time I was there—he never took anything but the medicine; he had two spells, and once in twenty-four hours I would have to hold him down.

Q. How was his mind—in what condition was his mind?

A. He did not seem to know anything.

Q. Was he raving, or was he quiet?

A. About as I say, twice in twenty-four hours he would get up raving, but I could not understand what he was saying only one word or two; when I was holding him down he would call me a God damn son of a bitch, and I think that was the only word in English that he knew; he seemed very bad about once

in the day time and once at night, and I would hold him down until it was over; he would kick and try to bite and spit in my face.

Q. Where is Dr. Leslie?
A. He is dead I believe now.

Q. You do not know anything about him being in the Asylum only what they told you?
A. Only what I was told.

Q. This all occurred here in Lincoln?
A. Yes, sir; all I know is that he had those wounds, and that is all I know about it.

Q. Do you know Mrs. Hoffman's first name?
A. I did not; she was talking to me one time, and there was one man that he was afraid of, and he said there was a man with a big beard that used him well.

Testimony of Henry Statley.

Henry Statley sworn.

Questioned by Senator Schoneheit:

Q. You may state where you live now.
A. In Olive Branch.

Q. What county and state?
A. Lancaster county.

Q. How long have yon been living there?
A. I am here now about twelve years.

Q, Are yon living a part of the time in Lincoln?
A. No, sir; I lived all the time ont there.

Q. Have you a wife?
A. I have a woman in the Asylum.

Q. How long has she been there?
A. Since the 21st of October, 1880.

Q. This Asylum is in Lancaster county?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you ever go to see her while she was there?
A. I used to see her every month, every four or five weeks up to the middle of July, 1881; I was permitted to see her and speak to her, and about the middle of July was the first time that objection was made to my seeing her.

Q. With whom did you talk?
A. It was Mr. Hay.

Q. You talked with him?
A. I talked to him.

Q. That conversation was at the Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you went there to see your wife?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And that was the time he refused to let you see her?
A. Yes, exactly.

Q. What time did you go there again after that—how long afterwards?
A. I went there again in about three weeks. I had some business in here, and I went to see her.

Q. Which of the doctors did you see then?
A. Dr. Mathewson.

Q. Did you ask him to see your wife?
A. Yes; I asked him if I could see her, and he told me "It won't be any good to you to see her and you had better not see her?"

Q. Did you get to see her?
A. No, I did not see her, and so it was there the next time; the next time was five or six weeks.

Q. Did yon talk that time with Dr. Mathewson?

A. Yes, sir; with Dr. Mathewson again.

Q. What excuse did he make?

A. He made about the same excuse, and I could not tell you all he told me. I could not see her, that is all, and I never could see her from that time up to the 9th of January.

Q. Did you go there every time you came to town?

A. I had a good deal of business in town, and was sometimes twice a week in and more, and about every time I was there.

Q. Did you go there to see her every time?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And they would not let you see her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And that is Dr. Mathewson and Dr. Hay also?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When did you see her afterwards—after the first time?

A. The first time I saw her was, I think, the 9th of January.

Q. What year was that in?

A. Of last year.

Q. Now, you did not see her from about July until January?

A. Not until January, 1882, and then I had a letter from Mr. Parker, that I thought I could go to see her.

Q. You got a letter from Mr. Parker to go to see her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. To Dr. Mathewson?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And did he permit you to see your wife?

A. He accused me of being drunk.

Q. Was that the last time you were there—in July, 1881?

A. That was on the 9th of January. That was the first time I saw her.

Q. He refused to let you in, and then you got the letter from Mr. Parker?

A. Yes, sir; and then I could see her.

Q. Who was Mr. Parker—what business had he to give you a letter?

A. He was committee of the Insane Asylum up to that time.

Q. What was his other name, do you know?

A. No, he is county judge now.

Q. Did you go to see her afterwards?

A. Afterwards, I was in again the middle of February, and it was at that time I had a mind to take her home, and I found her all right, and I told so to Mr. Mathewson, and he told me you can just as well try to get Mrs. Mathewson as to get her.

Q. Do you know any reasons why he would not let you have your wife?

A. I did not know then. I thought it just, but was not sure of it.

Q. What evidence did you have about any other irregularity, what was the matter, was anything the matter with your wife?

A. I could not tell you anything about that. I could not see her any more. It was too long a time since I saw her. From then, I never could see her again, and he told me all the time, you cannot see her—he told me, you cannot see her.

Q. That is from July, 1881, to January, 1882?

A. It was after, just the same again.

Q. You got your letter, and then he let you see her at the time you got the letter?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. But afterwards, he refused you again, as I understand you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you have any suspicion about any irregularity about youa wife?

A. She got a child in there, and it was for that I could not see her.

Q. Who told you?

A. I thought it was for that I could not see her. I found that out only about the middle of July. It was Mr. Beswick and his wife that came to see me and told me.

Q. Where do they live now?

A. In the same section I do, out at Olive Branch. They came to me and told me, do you know what for you cannot see your wife. No, I do not know, but I think it. Well, we know it. How do you know it. Well, did your wife have a child in there or did she have a child from you. I told him my wife took a child in with her. Well, we know all that, she said, but did she have a child there. Well, I don't know anything about that, and then she told me, I was visiting a good friend in there, the woman of the night watch, an old luck aunt to me; I was in there and saw your wife there, and asked my friend, who is that woman, and she told me.

Q. What is that woman's name that lives out there, that you mentioned?

A. Beswick.

Q. She told you that she had a conversation with one of your friends?

A. With one of her friends, and that was the woman of the night watch in there, and my woman was in the same room with the child, and she asked what woman that is, and the name of the woman, and how long she had a child, and then the woman of the night watch asked if Mr. Statley knows anything about it, and she said no, she did not believe it, and the night watch did not believe it.

Q. Did you believe it?

A. I believed it.

Q. What made you believe it—you did not see anything?

A. That shows what for I could not see her for a six months, and she was in bed the last time I saw her.

A. You believe that for the reason that they would not let you go in to see her?

A. No, sir.

Q. You do not know anything about it?

A. I never saw the child.

Q. Did you have any connection with your wife nine months or a year before that?

A. No, sir.

Q. And during that time she was in the Asylum—you did not see any child around there when you were in there?

A. No, sir.

Q. Any young babies?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did your wife tell you anything about having a baby?

A. No; when I was in there with Mr. Parker's letter she would not tell me yes or no; I spoke about it, and she would not say yes or no.

Q. What kind of a way is she in her mind?

A. She is all right, and she would be long ago without that reason—it is for that reason she got weak in the head—when she has the baby too long on her breast, and I told him about it.

Q. You told them that that was all the matter?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, then, tell us how often you were there from the time you took that letter there?

A. I was there every month once at least.

Q. What time did you get that letter?

A. I had that letter on the 9th of January.

Q. And in February you were there again and he would not let you see her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. From July until January he would not let you see her in 1881?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did your wife appear to be rational when you saw her?

A. The first time when I saw her she was quite rash; she asked me to take her out and she would like to get out: I could not answer right off I would do it now, and she told me Mr. Hay is a good man; she had "plenty of good men there that would help me and do me right."

Q. Did she offer to go with you at any time?

A. No, not since that time; that was the first time in the beginning.

Q. Did she know you when you came there in January?

A. Oh, yes.

Q. Did she seem to be rational?

A. No; I told her I would not take her home, and then she got kind of rash, and she said there was "plenty of men in here that would help me out and do me right, and I do not need you;" that was the first time I could see her again in January.

Q. How often did you see her afterwards?

A. Afterwards, it was about the middle of February when I saw her again, and it was at that time they let me speak to her about two or three hours.

Q, Were you all alone at that time?

A. Yes, I was alone with her, and I did not know what it was for.

Q. Was anybody around there?

A. Yes, the wife was around there—Mrs. Mathewson—she was in the alley.

Q. Did she stand there and hear what you had to say to your wife?

A. No; she was just walking up and back, to and fro.

Q. You were talking in German with your wife?

A. Yes, I was talking in German.

Q. What time did you see her after that, or how long was it?

A. After that I could not see her up until July again.

Q. July, 1882?

A. Yes, sir—no, in June I believe it was—no, it was not; It was in June, and then I could not see her, and they told me you cannot see her, and then I had Mr. Beswick with me; they said it was no use to see her, and your wife don't want to see you, and then when I came out I saw my wife through the window, and I asked, How is it you don't want to see me no more, and

she said she did not need to see me any more; Mr. Matthewson told me to go away, and I had nothing to do there,

Q. When did you go there afterwards?

A. After that I was in again in July, and I believe at that time I was up to Parker's, as I could not see her then, and told him how it was, and he told me, I can't understand what for you can't see her, and then he gave me a letter to Dr. Curtin, and they dropped it, and Mr. Curtin must know something too.

Q. What did the Dr. do?

A. The Dr. said I don't want anything to do with Dr. Mathewson.

Q. Did you take that letter Mr. Parker gave you direct to Mr. Mathewson?

A. No, not at that time; I gave it to Mr. Curtin, and he gave me a letter again to Mr. Field and Holmes.

Q. What did they do?

A. They did nothing that I know.

Q. Did you take any letter at all to Mr. Mathewson?

A. I could not tell you now if I took that time a letter from Mr. Field and Holmes or not.

Q. Did you ever take a letter to Mr. Mathewson?

A. That was before, in January.

Q. In July, 1881, you took a letter to Mr. Mathewson from Mr. Parker?

A. I could not tell.

Q. How many letters did you get from Parker?

A. I got it twice that I know.

Q. The first letter you think you gave to Mr. Mathewson in July, 1881?

A. Yes, in 1882.

Q. And then the second letter you got in 1882 from Mr. Parker?

A. I do not know what the letter was but it was to get her out.

Q. Did you tell Mr. Mathewson that you wanted your wife?
A. More than once.

Q. What time was it that you saw your wife last?
A. The last time was yesterday.

Q. Is she in the same situation that she was before?
A. Yes, I found her yesterday pretty right and I asked Mr. Hay if I can not take her out, and he said I can do nothing. "Will she go," he asked me, and I told him yes, and he would not believe it.

Q. You have been there off and on once a month or so ever since she is in there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And every time you came to town you went out to see her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. In what manner did Mr. Mathewson speak to you; was he cross?
A. He insulted me almost every time.

Q. He insulted you?
A. Yes, he seemed to want to get up my spirit to get rid of me.

Q. He seemed to try to make you mad?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you say anything wrong to him?
A. No, sir.

Q. You said nothing except to see your wife and see if he would not let her go?
A. Yes, sir.

A. And when you told him to let her go home with you what excuse did he make?
A. He said you can't have her—you can just as well have my wife as yours.

Q. And about the baby—you do not know anything about that yourself?

A. I never saw it myself.

Q. And you do not know only what you have heard?
A. No.

Questioned by Judge Mason.

Q. When you went there to the Asylum did you have a quarrel with your wife?
A. Never. She got a little hot sometimes but I do not know what for it was. It was on the ninth of January that I was there and then she got out. She told me Mr. Hay is my good friend and will help me out and do me right, and she turned right around and looked away.

Q. That was the first time you went there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. When you went back again after she got a little warm, then they treated you that way and told you it was not best for you to see her?
A. I don't know that I remember that.

Q. (Senator Schoenheit repeated question in German.)
A. After I saw that then I was up about three hours with her and she was all right and I ask Dr. Mathewson if I can not take her home and he told me no.

Q. When Dr. Hay told you it was not best for you to see her, it was before that that you went there when she got a little excited—was it not?
A. Before July, 1881?

Q. Yes, sir?
A. I don't know anything about that.

Q. Is it not true that every time you have been there that she got excited?
A. No, sir.

Q. And is not true that she didn't want to see you, and didn't she refuse to see you?
A. She never refused as I heard; the Dr. told so.

Q. Didn't you go into the ward to see her one day and she ran away from you, and ran into the room?

A. That thing is so; it was the first time I was in there to see her, and it was about six weeks or seven weeks she was in there, and then I got a letter to go in and take her out.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. From whom did you get the letter?

A. Parker, I think; and when I came in everything was open, and the hall was open, and the Dr. brought her to me, and she got right out of the door; she didn't run away, but she just passed away, and I go home she say; she asked me first if I would not take her home, and I said I don't know.

Q. When you came the next time did she run away?

A. She never ran away again.

Q: Is it not true that you have talked with Moses Oppenheimer to-day?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Is it not true that you told him that your wife ran away from you when you called to see her?

A. I never talked to him about that; we had no talk then; I asked him if he will come in and talk for me.

Q. Do you mean to swear now that your wife had a baby in the Insane Asylum?

A. Well, I can prove that, I told you right before, by Mr. Beswick and Mrs. Beswick.

Q. You can prove that by Mr. and Mrs. Beswick?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You know that as well as any fact you have sworn to?

A. I believe that before I do so.

Q. And she is in the Insane Asylum now?

A. Yes, sir, she is.

Q. And when you come to see her is she willing to see you?

A. Well, she came every time that the Dr. was willing to do so.

Q. I ask you when you come to see her now is she willing to see you?

A. As I know; but then I don't know what the Dr. has to do.

Q. When you come to town do you come past the Asylum?

A. When I come in I come right up by the Asylum.

Q. Did you go to the Asylum before you came to town?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You stopped at the Asylum before you came to town?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And is it not a fact that every time you went there your wife got mad and you had trouble with her?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you talk with any of the attendants when you were there?

A. That was once on the 9th of January, but not generally.

Q. Did you talk with any of the attendants while you were there?

A. No, sir.

Q. You only talked with Dr. Hay and Dr. Mathewson?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you have told all that took place between you and them?

Yes, sir.

Q. And you took a letter to Dr. Mathewson twice?

A. Well, I believe the bookkeeper was there, and I used to talk to him.

Q. Did you give to them the letter which you took?

A. To Dr. Mathewson.

Q. You gave it to him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you give him more than one letter?

A. I believe there were two.

Q. Did you give each of them to Dr. Mathewson?
A. To Dr. Mathewson I gave them.

DR. J. T. HAY, recalled.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. You heard the testimony of this witness, and know the witness Statley's wife?
A. I do.

Q. Now will you state the facts about this man visiting the Asylum, and about this patient if she has ever been confined or had a child in the Asylum?
A. Well, in regard to that, she never has; I am positive of that with regard to the child. With regard to his not seeing her, he has seen her quite often, as I remember, and when he did not see her it was because she refused to see him.

Q. You may state if you ever refused to let him see her—if so, state why the refusal was.
A. I remember one instance; I think it was when she was in bed; I remember that before that they had a quarrel there and she was in bed, and he came there to see her, and I went in and asked her if she wanted to see him, and she positively said she did not; she did not want to see him, and I refused to let him see her inasmuch as she was sick in bed.

Q. Was it before that time that they had this quarrel?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was the effect upon her in having this quarrel?
A. Well, it excited her very much.

Q. Did she take a child there?
A. That is a fact.

Q. How old was the child?
A. Seven or eight months; it was a nursing child.

Q. What is the condition of that patient now?
A. Well, she is in about the same condition.

Q. Is she insane now?
A. She is insane.

Q. What is the nature of her insanity?
A. She has delusions, and talks a great deal to herself and to imaginary people.

Q. She sees people and talks to them?
A. Yes, sir.

DR. H. P. MATHEWSON, recalled.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Tell this committee about this patient, Mrs. Statley, and what you know about her?
A. This is the third time she has been in the Asylum; she has been insane I think during the whole time from the first until the present, but Mr. Statley came to take her home, and kept her a short time, and he was obliged to bring her back; after she had been there a while, she got a little quiet and he took her home again; the next time he brought her back, she brought a child in her arms; the Commissioners said it was a very urgent case, and requested that we should take care of the child, and we kept the child and weaned it, and when it was about a year and a half old he came and took it away; this woman has never changed any, and is a very insane woman; I talked with the Commissioners about it, and they wanted me to keep the woman there; they would quarrel, and they frequently have fights.

Q. Who have the fight?
A. Her husband and herself, and one time she got him before the Commissioners and tried to get him in the Asylum, but he got her in; when she came they asked me to keep her; when he came to see her he always saw her if she was willing to see him, and when he came with the letters of Mr. Parker requesting that he might see her, we had to drag her right along, and when she got to the door she went right out and undertook to run away, and I had to go and bring her back, and she would not talk to

him; frequently he has been there when he has been the worse for liquor, and at that time I did not try to have him see her, and at all those times whenever he has asked to take her away I have referred him to the Commissioners, and that is the occasion of getting the letter. I told him whenever the Commissioners were willing she should go I was willing, but inasmuch as they requested me to keep her, I supposed it was my business to keep her until the Commissioners gave me permission to let her go. In regard to her condition, we have a statement every day, and we know just how every person is from it; any person that has ever been in the Hospital we can refer to any day they were there and tell just in what condition they were.

Q. Have you got those papers?

A. Yes, I have got those papers from the time she came there the last time until the present time.

Q. Was she ever confined?

A. No, sir, she never was.

Q. Did she ever have a child in the Insane Asylum?

A. No, sir.

Q. For the purpose of showing that, I will offer the papers of her daily condition, with the request that they be returned to the Asylum—will you produce the papers?

A. Yes, sir; this is the file of papers from the date she came there until the present time.

Q. This relates to her?

A. To all the rest of the patients in the wards; the condition of each patient is marked every day.

Testimony of Hattie Byers.

Hattie Byers sworn.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. Where do you live?
A. In Lincoln.

Q. How long have you been living here?
A. Since the 9th day of last July.

Q. Are you acquainted with Dr. Mathewson of the Insane Asylum?
A. I am.

Q. Also with Dr. Hay?
A. I am.

Q. Have you ever been to the Lunatic Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long were you there?
A. I was there four weeks lacking one day; I went there the 27th of November and left the 24th of the next month.

Q. In what capacity were you there?
A. I was attendant on the second female ward.

Q. During your attendance there did you ever see anything or any peculiar treatment by Dr. Mathewson towards any of the patients—if so, state fully all you know?
A. I saw some treatment that I think would be called cruel. It was a heavy large woman refused to undress; I had been having trouble with her for a week, and we had our orders that the patients should leave their clothes outside of the room at night, and she refused to mind us and defied us, and the Dr. himself; we had to go after him; he came and ordered her to undress, and she refused, and he asked her to undress, and he tripped her and choked her.

Q. He tripped her down?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. In what position was she when she was down?
A. She was sitting on the floor.

Q. Was he behind her or before?
A. Exactly behind her.

Q. You may give the position of his hand and the manner in which he choked her?
A. Her head rested against his knee and his hand hand went under her chin.

Q. Did he choke her so that she made any noise as though he was choking her?
A. She did not make any noise.

Q. How long did he choke her in that way?
A. I could'nt tell exactly how long it was, it was not very long.

Q. Was it only once, and did he let her go?
A. She refused to undress aftet he quit choking her the first time, and he choked her again.

Q. And what then?
A. We attendants undressed her. She did'nt offer any resistance and we undressed her and she laid down on the bed.

Q. Do you know a patient there by the name of Kaufman?
A. I knew a Mrs. Kaufman there from Omaha.

Q. Who attended on her while you were attending at the Lunatic Asylum?
A. Miss Gilmore did.

Q. Did you see Mrs. Mathewson around there at any time attending while you were there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How often during the day did she come around, probably?
A. I think she was in the hall about six times, not more than that during the twenty-seven days I was there.

Q. Did you know her feeding or attending to Mrs. Kaufman at all?
A. I never saw her feed her or touch her while I was there.

Q. You would have noticed her if she had done it; you were right there?

A. I was right there; yes, sir.

Q. Do you know of any ill treatment or peculiar treatment towards Mrs. Kaufman?

A. No; I do not.

Q. Do you know of any patient on that ward one night making considerable noise, and the Doctor went in to quiet her?

A. I know one or two such instances.

Q. You may state and give the names and what occurred.

A. I do not know what occurred, I only know that a woman named Sophie Kruger, who had the last room on the hall was making considerable noise and we heard some body go in there and quiet her, but I do not know anything about that.

Q. The next morning did she show any signs of bruises?

A. She appeared just as usual.

Q. Who went in there to quiet her?

A. I did'nt see any body go in there. I was in my room, and some body opened the door and went down the hall and went in there. No one but the Doctor had the keys, and I think it must have been him.

Q. Who was with you at the time that occurred?

A. Miss Gilmore.

Q. Do you not know how long the person that went in that cell was there?

A. I do not know,

Q, What was the other occurrence?

A. A woman by the name of Anna Kratz, I think had her breast considerably bruised up, black and blue, and her room-mate said the Doctor threw her on the floor and stamped on her breast. I don't know whether that was true or not.

Q. You saw her breast, did you?

A. Yes, I saw her breast; that is what the patient said, but I do not know whether she was hardly responsible or not.

Q. You saw her in the evening, that patient that was so bruised up?

A. Yes. sir.

Q. There was nothing the matter with her then?

A. I do not know whether there was or not, but if there was, I did'nt see it. It was not until at least three days after the night she made the fuss that these marks appeared. I heard the disturbance, and would have gone back there to settle it, but my room-mate would not go with me, and I went to the spring door and the night watch was coming up the stair and I sent for the Doctor to come up and settle it.

Q. And the Doctor came?

A. Yes, sir; I do not know that he went into the room, but her room-mate said he did, some one came in and went back and quieted her.

Q. And it was three days after that you saw the woman's breast bruised up?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did the woman say who did it?

A. She does'nt talk English and she did'nt say anything that I could understand. She cannot say but two words in Euglish.

Q. What was her name?

A. Kratz.

Q. She was a German?

A. A Bohemian, I think.

Q. You could not understand her?

A. No, sir.

Q. Who was the room-mate?

A. A woman by the name of Shepherd.

Q. Was the room-mate a lunatic too?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In what condition was her mind?

A. She was very crazy, but she was not violent.

Q. And her room-mate said that the Doctor did it?
A. Yes, sir; her room-mate said so.

Q. Did you leave there yourself at the time you left there, or were you discharged?
A. I left because I wanted to.

Q. You were not discharged?
A. No, sir.

Q. Have you been over to that Asylum since?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What time was that?
A. I was there one Saturday night a short time after I left. I don't know how long. I was there, yesterday.

Q. What did you go over yesterday for, to see some patients?
A. I went there to see Miss Gilmore.

Q. One of the matrons?
A. She is the second ward attendant.

Q. Did you see the Doctor at that time?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did the Doctor ever say to you—did you speak about this investigation?
A. He used the word investigation. He said he understood I had been making mischief by saying something about Mrs. Kaufman.

Q. What did you tell him?
A. I told him several things. He said that he understood that I had said Mrs. Kaufman was neglected, and if she was neglected it was my fault, because I was there; and I said I didn't say it, and she was not neglected by the attendants.

Q. What else was said?
A. I told him that I had said that he didn't go to see her while I was there.

Q. Did you tell him you wanted to see Miss Gilmore?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did he say to you?

A. Dr. Hay went to tell her that I wanted to see her, and about the time she came into the room Dr. Mathewson said I could not talk to her.

Q. Dr. Mathewson told you that you could not talk to her?

A. Yes, sir?

Q. What did Dr. Hay say to you?

A. He didn't say anything except good-morning.

Q. He didn't tell you that you couldn't see Miss Gilmore?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see Miss Gilmore?

A. Yes, sir; I got to say good-day to her.

Q. Was the Doctor around with you all the time?

A. Yes; he was about three feet away from where I was standing.

Q. He would not let you talk to her without him hearing it?

A. He would not let me talk to her under any circumstances.

Q. Did he give his reasons to you?

A. He did not.

Questioned by Senator Rogers:

Q. Have you ever known any improprieties from the attendants or officers towards the prisoners or patients?

A. I believe not.

Questioned by Senator Schonheit:

Q. Did the Doctor order you away from there?

A. He told me I was not wanted there; and he told me to go away; and I told him very well, I would go, and I went.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Where did you go to work when you first came to the Hospital?

A. On the second ward.

Q. You say you were on the second ward twenty-seven days?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You were on that ward all the time?
A. I said I was in the Hospital, but I don't think I said I was on the ward twenty-seven days.

Q. How long were you on that ward?
A. I was taken on the third ward the Friday evening before I left, and I left on Sunday noon.

Q. Did you understand why you went up to the third ward?
A. I presume I did.

Q. Why did you leave the second ward?
A. Well, you told me because I was not needed there, and I was needed on the third ward.

Q. Didn't I tell you that Miss Gilmore said she would just as soon be alone as to have you there, and that you could go up on the third ward?
A. No, sir; you didn't tell me that exactly—something like that, Miss Gilmore said she could get along without help.

Q. Why didn't you stay up on the third ward?
A. I didn't like to stay there.

Q. What did you tell me about the girls up there?
A. I told you that I didn't think they treated me as they had the previous attendant.

A. Didn't they say that you didn't amount to anything up there, and they didn't want you?
A. No, sir? they didn't to me.

Q. Didn't they say you were careless and left the doors open, and somebody would be killed?
A. No, sir; I never left a door open up there.

Q. Who was this woman that you say I choked so much?
A. Mary Barber.

Q. Who was the one that you say I went to her room?
A. Sophie Kruger. I know that some one came into the hall.

Q. Who was the next one?
A. Anna Kratz.

Q. Do you know I went there?
A. I don't know it, only that I heard some one come into the hall; I don't know that it was you.

Q. Who was present with you at this difficulty with Mary Barber?
A. Miss Gilmore. If she was not in the room she was just outside of the door.

Q. She was present just the same as you were, and saw just the same as you saw?
A. I think she was.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. You reside in Lincoln?
A. No, sir.

Q. Where do you live?
A. South of the city.

Q. How long have you lived south of the city?
A. Since the ninth of July.

Q. Were you sent to the Asylum by any person yesterday or today?
A. No, sir.

Q. You went of your own notion?
A. I did.

Q. No one suggested it?
A. No, sir.

Q. You wanted to see Miss Gilmore?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you see her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you see her as much as you wanted to?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you have any particular business that you wanted to see her about?

A. I called to see her because she was a friend that I wanted to see.

Q. That is, the Miss Gilmore that is an attendant on the second ward?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And she is the Miss Gilmore that was an attendant there when you were there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And saw this choking—you call it choking?

A. I didn't say I called it choking; I said it was choking.

Q. He was behind her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And she was sitting on the floor?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And he was right behind her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, will you tell me how he held his hands when he was behind her?

A. He had his hands this way. (Indicates by interlocking fingers and thumbs, drawn about the neck.) He had his hands under her throat.

Q. And her head against his knee?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You say she didn't hallo?

A. No, sir.

Q. She didn't look as though she was hurt much?

A. I didn't see her face?

Q. Did she scream?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did she make any noise?

Not then.

Q. And he took his hands off and she wouldn't undress or let you undress her, and he put his hands around her again and held her a little while, and then she let you undress her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And then she was quiet?

A. Well, she was not very quiet.

Q. Was she difficult to manage?

A. She was the worst patient on the hall—the worst one to manage.

Q. What was the difficulty?

A. It was about anything she didn't want to do. She did't want to do anything that you wanted her to do.

Q. If you wanted her to dress she would not be dressed, and if you wanted her to undress she wanted to be dressed?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you had difficulty in managing her and you sent for the Doctor?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And he took this method to manage her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. At the time did it strike you that she was an abused woman? Did you feel your humanity shocked, and your heart rise in pity?

A. No, sir; I must say I didn't feel very sorry for the woman?

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Were you not sometimes afraid to go into the room to take away any plates or cups?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And didn't you have to call me to go in and get her plate and cup?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And when you wanted to undress her, you had to call me to help you?

A. Yes, sir; at that time.

Q. And when she set out, you couldn't do anything with her?
A. No, sir.

Q. Were you afraid of her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was Miss Gilmore afraid of her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did she ever hurt you?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Could she drive both of you anywhere she wanted to?
A. She never undertook to; I do not know what she would do.

Q. Why were you afraid of her?
A. Because she was stronger than I was.

By Senator Schoenheit:

Q. The reason you didn't feel more sorry for her was because she was stubborn?

A. I felt sorry that she should be hurt, but I didn't feel sorry that she should be properly punished.

Q. Didn't the Doctor tell you to hold her hands while he choked her?

A. I won't be certain; I think he told me to hold her hand, and I took hold of her hand and she jerked it away and I didn't attempt it again; I am not certain.

Q. Would it hurt her much if she hadn't been undressed? What was the object of compelling her to undress?

A. All the patients had to put their clothes out in the hall, and she defied the rules. I do not know what the object was.

Testimony of Henry K. Shaver.

Henry K. Shaver sworn.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. Where do you live?
A. In this city—Lincoln.

Q. How long have you been living here?
A. Three years last November.

Q. Are you acquainted with Dr. Mathewson, at the Lunatic Asylum?
A. Yes; slightly.

Q. Do you know a man by the name of Hedrick, a patient at the Lunatic Asylum?
A. I do not know him by the name.

Q. Do you know anything that occurred between an attendant in the Lunatic Asylum and the patient within the past three or four years?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You may state what that was, if you saw anything—any occurrence between the patient and the officers and attendants at the Asylum, and give the time and place.
A. I saw two acts that I thought were rather cruel.

Q. Commence with the first time.
A. I think they were both in August—this last August.

Q. How far were these acts apart, probably?
A. A few days.

Q. State the acts as you saw them and as they occurred.
A. Well, the first time I was unloading some lumber at the north end of the building and they were fetching the crazy ones in from the exercise, and they had two or three that they had to go down into the basement. I thought they were going in about as fast as they reasonably and possibly could. One of the attendants came up behind an old man, probably fifty or fifty-five or sixty years old, and caught

him by the back of the neck and gave him a plunge in that hole there about as a dog would a gopher, which I think was unnecessary when the man was quiet and walking along peaceably.

Q. Do you know the name of the attendants?
A. I do not know their names.

Q. Do you know the name of the patient?
A. I do not. I worked there, but do not know the names of any of them.

Q. But know that the one that was pushed in that manner was a patient?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the one that pushed him was an attendant?
A. I know he was.

Q. Was Dr. Mathewson anywhere around there?
A. I did not see him.

Q. Did you say anything to him?
A. No. sir.

Q. Now you may relate the other circumstance.
A. The other was the matter at the mortar-box. I was hauling some lumber from the south end of the building, around to the north end, that they had framed there for the north end. I had it unloaded and was driving along, and there were two of the attendants that had a man down holding his hands and choking him, and they choked him until he gasped for breath. I thought they were choking him to death, and I stopped the team, and then a Dutchman or Scotchman commenced to talk broken to him, and they got off of this fellow and began to cuss him and wanted to whip him, and directly this fellow rolled over and got up very leisurely and started off a little way, and I drove around to the other end of the building.

Q. Did you see any other acts?
A. No.

Questioned hy Senator Rogers:

Q. You say he began to cuss him—can you repeat about what they said?

A. He told him it was none of his business, and to attend to his own business and not to interfere, and he called him a God d—n son-of-a-b—h, and a regular string of oaths, and it come out like that.

Q. Well, was it customary among attendants to use language of that kind?

A. I do not know whether it was or not. I never heard any of them use any such language, only on that occasion.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Do you know that this man you speak of using the oaths was an attendant at the Asylum?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You did know it?

A. I know it.

Q. Did you know his name?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. If you do not know his name, how do you know he was an attendant?

A. I know he was from the fact that I know he used that authority over the men that were out around there. One of the other attendants told me who he was.

Q. Do you know the name of the other attendant—the one that told you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who was that?

A. Mr. Kelliher.

Q. He told you he was an attendant?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When did Kelliher tell you that?

A. The same day.

Q. Did you have a talk with Kelliher about this case?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Kelliher was one of the attendants?

A. Yes, sir; he run the garden part of it?

Q. Did he see this case?

A. I do not know whether he did or not. He was right between where this occurred and the barn.

Q. Was he in plain view of the transaction?

A. No, sir. He was between this house and the barn.

Q. Did he see it?

A. I do not know whether he did or not.

Q. What was the first thing you saw?

A. They had him down. I saw him throw him down.

Q. What was the next thing you saw?

A. I saw them on him and choking him.

Q. Both on him?

A. Yes, one was choking him and the other holding his hands.

Q. Was the one that was holding him standing over him?

A. He was rather on the side of him on his knees.

Q. And how was the one that was holding his hands?

A. He was on him.

Q. He had his hands stretched out, one on each side?

A. No, sir.

Q. How then?

A. I should suppose he had one down this way and the other in that shape. (Indicates with both hands stretched toward the same side).

Q. Were his legs straddle of him?

A. I do not think neither of them was straddle of him.

Q. Did not one have him down chugging in the breast with the knees?

A. I did not see him chug him.

Q. Or kick him?

A. I did not see him kick him.

Q. Or strike him?

A. I did not see them strike him.

Q. You saw him from the time they threw him down until they let him up?

A. I was unloading some lumber and turned my team around, and I saw them throw him, and I was going along and there was probably a rod that I could not see over, and then I drove on up and stopped.

Q. You did not see them strike him?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or kick him?

A. No, sir; I did not see them kick him.

Q. Did you see them choke him?

A. I saw them choke him.

Q. Did he have both hands on his throat?

A. I think he did.

Q. Was he at his head?

A. He was at the side of him.

Q. Was he on the same side that the man was that had hold of his hands?

A. No, sir.

Q. The man had hold of his hands on one side and the other man was on the other side chugging him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you saw all of that transaction?

A. I did.

Q. They could not have kick him unless you saw it?

A. Not unless it was when he first fell.

Q. And they could not have chugged him with the knees?

A. Not unless I saw it?

Q. If they did you would certainly have seen it?

A. I think so.

Q. But in this other case they were going down in the cellar?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. That is the ward where they keep the convalescents?

A. I do not know what they keep there, but I know that is where they drove them in like sheep, in that hole there.

Q. That is what you call driving them in like sheep?

A. Yes, sir; that is what I call it.

Q. And they do that every day?

A. I suppose so.

Q. And the only thing unusual was that they pushed the old man?

A. I saw them push the old man, and I thought that was not necessary.

Q. And the old man fell?

A. He went in there and his coat tail was the last thing I saw of him.

Q. Did you see him fall?

A. No, sir; I did not see him fall, but I saw him go down in the cellar. I said when he was going down, before he got down a step he catched him by the nape of the neck and pushed him in head first.

Q. He was at the head of the steps and they catched him by the nape of the neck and pitched him in head first?

A. Yes, sir; pitched him right in.

Q. There were men ahead of him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When they pitched him that way, did they not throw him on somebody?

A. I do not known; I should suppose they would.

Q. Do you know who did that?

A. One of the men that had authority. I know that it was one of the attendants.

Q. How do you know that?

A. I know Kellther told me so.

Q. He is the same fellow that told you about this other one?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How did he come to tell you about this?
A. Because I entered complaint, and we were talking about it.

Q. Did you ever say anything to Dr. Mathewson about it?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you say anything to Dr. Hay about it?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you know Dr. Hay?
A. I do not know.

Q. Did you know Dr. Mathewson?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you thought it was a cruel thing to do?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you worked there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You are a man of a family?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You saw Dr. Mathewson every day?
A. No, sir; but most every day.

Q. And you never mentioned it to him?
A. No.

Q. And in the other case you saw Dr. Mathewson every day.
A. Yes; nearly every day.

Q. And you did not mention it to any officer in the Asylum?
A. Only to Kelliher—that is the only one I talked with.

Testimony of H. C. Rector.

H. C. Rector sworn.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. Where do you reside?
A. In Lincoln.

Q. How long have you been a resident of Lincoln?
A. About seven years this coming spring.

Q. Are you acquainted with Mr. Mathewson?
A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know anything abouth the Lunatic Asylum?
A. Nothing, except hearsay.

Q. Are you acquainted with any of the attendants?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you ever have any conversation with any of the attendants about this Lunatic Asylum business?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who was it?
A. Mr. Will Merrill.

Q. What time was it?
A. It has been this winter.

Q. Is he there at the Lunatic Asylum yet?
A. I think not; I think he is away from there now.

Q. Where did that conversation take place?
A. Here in Lincoln, at my place of business.

Q. What did he say to you about the treatment; that is, so far as he was concerned?
A. He spoke about "funking the lunies" down there, as he called them.

Q. State just exactly what he said—about himself particularly.
A. He came in one day—and he was in my place every time he

came to town, pretty much, and he would call in and talk with me, and I used to rather joke with him about being there, and told him they would get away with him, or ask if he was not afraid of them, and he said he was not, and he said he could get away with them because he said he didn't calculate to take anything off them. If they came at him he said he was going to thump them. After that—I do not know, but it must have been a month or so—he came in one day and he was talking with me, and he showed me his hands and knuckles, and they were swollen; I think one of them was knocked back and his hand was considerably crippled up, and I asked him what was the matter with it, and he said he was thumping "lunies;" and he said he had tumbled to a better thing now, but he didn't say what that was, but I inferred from the conversation that he calculated to take a stick afterwards, or a billy.

Q. Did you understand him to say that he had been pounding the lunatics with his fist?

A. Yes; that is what he said.

Q. That made it sore?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long ago was that?

A. I am not sure, but I think it was in December.

Q. Last December?

A. Yes, sir; or in January.

Q. This last January?

A. Yes, sir; last month. It was either the fore part of last month or latter part of December.

By Judge Mason:

Q. Who did you say this man was that told you this?

A. Will Merrill.

Q. He was a great fellow to blow and tell what he did.

A. Yes; he talked a great deal with his mouth.

Q. And was always blowing about what great things he did?

A. No, I do not know that he was blowing about what he had done, but it was about what he would do if they attacked him.

Q. This was all predicated upon the proposition that if they attacked him?

A. No; he said he would knock them hellward; that is what he said.

Q. Don't you know that he was discharged for bragging about what he did?

A. No; I knew he left there, but I do not know under what circumstances.

Q. You do not know when he left, or at what time?

A. No; but I think it was in the latter part of January.

Q. You kept a drug store in Lincoln?

A. No, sir; I do not now, but used to.

Q. What are you engaged in?

A. I have a Temperance Billiard Hall now.

Testimony of William B. Meter.

William B. Meter sworn.

Questioned by Senator Schonheit:

Q. Where do you live?

A. In Lincoln.

Q. How long have you been living here?

A. Three years.

Q. Are you acquainted with Mr. Mathewson?

A. Slightly.

Q. And any of the lunatic attendants?

A. Slightly; I was up there to work a little while this fall.

Q. You have been living over there?

A. No, sir; I was there to work.

Q. What is your trade?

A. A gun and lock smith.

Q. How long were you there, working at the Asylum?

A. I could not tell exactly, but somewhere eight or ten days, or something thereabouts.

Q. Steady?

A. No, not exactly steady; I was there inside of a month, I presume this time; I could not say positively.

Q. What were you doing there?

Q. Repairing the locks.

Q. Did you see any particular occurrence between attendants and patients there that appeared to be cruel or unusual?

A. Nothing much to signify, except one. An attendant in the lower ward—I do not know what was the trouble—he threatened to tell Dr. Hay about it; he was not paying any attention, and he shoved him back in the seat and punched him in the ribs. I do not know that he hurt him very much; he did not seem to act as though he hurt him a great deal, but he intended to make him mind. The attendant said he would learn him to threaten on him. That was all there was of it.

Q. What did he do with him?

A. He sat him back in the seat; he pushed him back in the seat and punched him in the ribs.

Q. And told him he would learn him to be reporting on him?

A. Yes, to be telling things on him. I do not know that he hurt him very much.

Q. Is that all you saw?

A. Yes, sir; everything else was as well as any body could expect, so far as I could see.

Q. Who was the attendant?

A. I could not say. I did not ask his name.

Q. You do not know who the attendant was?

A. I paid no attention to it any more than to notice.

Q. Was it a male?

A. Yes, it was a man.

Q. About what aged man was the patient?
A. I could not say. He was a middle aged. I should judge from my recollection at present. I could not say exactly what age.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Can you tell about what time this was?
A. No, I cannot exactly, not now, I could if I was at home.

Q. It was in the first ward?
A. Yes, in the first ward, the lower ward. I think it was the first ward, if I am not mistaken.

Adjourned.

TESTIMONY OF S. A. BUCHTEL.

Wednesday Evening, Feb. 21, 1882.

S. A. Buchtel sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your age, occupation, and place of residence?
A. My age is twenty-three; I am attending bar at present at Omaha, Nebraska.

Q. Have you been on duty as an attendant at the Asylum, in the last two or three years?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long?
A. I was a little over two years.

Q. From what time to what time?
A. I went there in April, 1880.

Q. When did you leave?
A. No—it was in January, 1880. I left the last of March, 1882.

Q. What wards were you in?
A. I was on the second ward.

Q. Were you there as an attendant while Christner was an attendant?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you on the second ward all the time you were there?

A. I was with the exception of sometimes I was sent on the first or third for relief, merely for a couple of hours.

Q. How long were you an attendant with Mr. Christner?

A. Mr. Christner I think came there in October or September, I think, and he was on the ward with me until I left.

Q. What year do you mean that he came there in?

A. In 1881, I think.

Q. And he remained on that ward until you left?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you left at what time?

A. I left the last day of March, 1882.

Q. You may state, if during the time you were there, you saw an attendant strike, or kick, or choke, a patient?

A. No, sir; I never did.

Q. Now, you may state what the treatment of Christner, the attendant, was towards the patients, during the time you were with him?

A. I never saw anything out of the way. I thought he was very kind with the patients. I never saw him misuse any patient.

Q. Did you ever see him strike a patient?

A. I never did.

Q. Or kick one?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or choke one?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now, state, during the time you were there, if you ever saw any attendant strike, kick or choke a patient?

A. No, sir; I never did?

Q. You may state what the treatment as respects kindness and

gentleness or otherwise of Dr. Mathewson was, and the officers towards the patients?

A. They were always very kind.

Q. You were there nearly two years?

A. I was there over two years.

Q. Did you leave or were you discharged?

A. I left.

Q. You left on your own account?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you served in other hospitals?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What others?

A. Yankton, Dakota.

Q. How long?

A. I commenced there the first of April, 1882, and remained until the fourth of September, 1882.

Q. Did you leave of your own accord there, or were you discharged?

A. I left of my own accord.

Q. You may state how the treatment of the patients in this Asylum by the officers and attendants compares with the treatment in this other institutiou for kindness, gentleness, and attention or otherwise?

A. I think they are fully as good or better here than in Yankton, Dakota.

Q. While you were there did you go out while the patients went out to exercise?

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. You always heard Caristner was a kind hearted man, did you not?

A. I never heard very much about him. The only time I was with him was the time he was on the ward with me.

Q. How long was he on the ward with you?

A. He was on the ward with me, I think it was, in September, until the following year, the last of March, when I left there. I think he came there in September.

Q. That is about seven months; during that time you understood him to be a very kind hearted man?

A. Yes; I never saw anything rude about him.

Q. Was not that his reputation that he was a very kind hearted man?

A. I knew nothing about his reputation; that was his conduct while he was in my presence always.

Q. But you knew nothing of his reputation?

A. No, sir; I did not know his reputation previous to that.

Q. You never saw him kick any body?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear him accused of kicking any body?

A. Well, I saw something in the papers, I believe.

Q. You mean in the papers since this investigation commenced?

A. Yes, sir.

But before that, did you ever hear of him kicking any body?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. Did you ever hear of him hitting any body?

A. No, sir.

Q. Then he treated all the patients very kindly, did he not, and affectionately?

A. Yes; I never saw him use any harsh words or mistreatment.

Q. Did you ever see any body struck, while you were in the Asylum?

A. I never did; no, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear of any body being hit with a brick, while you were in the Asylum?

A. I never did.

Q. Did you ever hear of Palmer being kicked or hit while you were there?

A. I do not know as I remember the patient Palmer.

Q. Well, did you ever hear of anyone out there thrown on the ground?

A. No, sir.

Q. Christner really was a very kind man was he not?

A. I never saw nothing rude about him.

Q. He was a very kind man was he not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you know a patient by the name of Searle?

A. No, I believe not.

Q. Did you know a patient by the name of Palmer?

A. I remember that name, but then as to that patient I do not know as I can place him. I do not know as I have a distinct recollection of him, but his name is familiar.

Q. What ward were you on?

A. I was on the second ward.

Q. What is that—a bad ward?

A. It is not the best or the worst—it is the intermediate ward.

Q. You say you never saw Christner kick anybody—did you ever see anybody strike or kick anybody?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. You never saw anything there at all but what was very mild and gentle and kind?

A. Well, I never saw no patients abused there.

Q. You never saw an attendant strike back when a patient hit him or anything of that kind?

A. No, sir.

Q. Then according to your statement the attendants are all very nice and kind and even tempered men, are they?

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. You may state what if any particular instructions Dr. Mathewson gave you as to the treatment of the patients?

A. Well, his rules were to be very kind to them always. His rules were never to strike a yatient or misuse them in any way.

S. A. BUCHTEL.

TESTIMONY OF J. R. PERKINS.

J. R. Perkins sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your name, age, occupation, and residence?

A. My name is J. R. Perkins; my occupation was heating the building with steam the in furnaces; my age is 48—almost 49; I live in Omaha.

Q. Have you been on service in the Nebraska Insane Asylum?

A. I was there to work at the steam heating apparatus.

Q. How long were you there?

A. I was there about two thirds of the time from the last day of July, 1881, to January 16th or 17th, 1882.

Q. What wards of the building were you in?

A. I was in every ward of the build at different times.

Q. On different occasions?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What were your opportunities for observing, during the time you were there, the treatment of the attendants and officers in charge of the patients in the Asylum?

A. Well, I should say that my opportunities were as good as a man's could be, from the simple fact that I was there at all hours of the day.

Q. Will you state what the treatment of the attendants and officers was to the patients in the Asylum?

A. The treatment was uniformly very kind in every department I was ever in.

Q. Did you ever see while you were there an attendant strike, kick, or choke a patient?

A. I never did.

Q. You say you were in every ward?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. At different times and on different occasions and different hours in the day?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You were putting in the heating apparatus?

A. I was changing over the heating apparatus.

Q. I will ask you more particularly as to the manner and the treatment of Dr. Mathewson towards patients, officers, and attendants—what it was.

A. He was always very easy and very pleasant in his manners. I remember one time particularly of his coming into the second ward and two or three of the patients were feeling pretty billious about something, and he talked to them as a father would have talked to his own boy of 18 or 20 years old. He did not appear to show any violence or make any threats or anything of that kind, but he pacified them and satified them.

Q. Was that his uniform manner towards them?

A. It was so far as I saw him him in the wards.

Q. Did you see much of him about there?

A. There was hardly ever a day that I did not see him from one to two or three times, but there might be a day that I did not see him in the ward at all.

Q. How long have you lived in Omaha?

A. I went there the 18th day of last June.

Q. You have resided there since?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You are a man of a family?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you ever worked in other Institutions—other Insane Asylums?

A. Yes, sir; I worked in the one at Utica, N. Y., and at Elgin, Ill., and I have been up to the Mt. Pleasant, Iowa—three different times to that Asylum.

Q. What length of time were you in this institution?

A. I was working in the Utica Asylum for John Carlton for six weeks, probably three-fourths of the time.

Q. In every ward?

A. In all the wards in the east wing.

Q. And your opportunities in these other institutions for observing the treatment of the patients were about as it was here?

A. Yes, I was in those wards from the basement to the wards.

Q. State to the committee how the treatment of these patients by the officers and attendants compares with these other institutions?

A. Well, if I had to be an inmate of either one of the four, I should much rather be an inmate of this institution here, for the treatment and the food they gave them and their bedding is looked after and their personal wearing apparel.

Q. Did you observe Dr. Mathewson's conduct as to vigilance and attention towards the patients?

A. He used to turn up at almost any place and any time when you were looking for him and when you were not.

Q. You mean he was around the institution and looking after the patients?

A. I would frequently go to the office and want to ask him some question and would have to hunt him through the building and perhaps find him in the north side and perhaps in the south side. I frequently had to hunt him up.

Q. What was he doing there?

A. He was looking after the patients and talking to the attendants and fixing around and getting things in shape.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. You say that the doctor would turn up when you were not looking for him?

A. Yes, sir. For instance, I would start up in the second ward

on the north side, and I would see him on the opposite landing apparently going to the opposite ward in the center of the building.

Q. Were you looking for him?

A. A man working around the building would be apt to see what was going on.

Q. Were you looking for him?

A. No, sir: not particularly.

Q. Then he didn't turn up when you were not looking for him?

A. Not particularly, but he was very apt to come in when I was not looking for him and would not expect him.

Q. Was it your business to expect him where you were?

A. Sometimes it was and sometimes I would have to go to the ward and wait for him to come there by agreement.

Q. Do you know where the doctor was during this time when he was not with you?

A. No, sir. I might go up the landing on the north side and he would be going on the south side. The landings start and go up opposite and I would be on the ward and wouldn't notice when he would come along.

Q. It was not your business to look after him?

A. I was not hired for that purpose. I didn't go there and consider myself in duty bound to look after him or spend any time that way.

Q. Why do you say that he turned up?

A. To show that he was all over the building.

Q. Just because he came in when you were not looking for him?

A. I made that statement to show that he was all over the building anywhere or any place and you might go to do a job some place and he would be there.

Q. And it was his business to be there all over the building?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And that is what the State pays him for?

A. I suppose so.

Q. And he was not where his duty did not call him?

A. I don't mean to imply anything of that kind.

Q. The fact is you were just simply there doing certain work?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. It was not your business to look after Dr. Mathewson?
A. No, sir.

Q. Or to know anything about him?
A. I was not supposed to and had no interest in it.

Q. And when you say that he was not where you were looking for him, what you mean to say is that he was not where you were looking for him when you were attending to your business?
A. I mean to say that he was coming into the wards at many different times, and sometimes he would be watching me to see if I did my work to suit him.

Q. Did he ever tell you that you did?
A. Yes, sir; and sometimes he told me that I did not and I would have to change it.

Q. Whose supervision were you under?
A. Dr. Mathewson's. To start with, I went there under A. G. Barnes and began the job for him.

Q. Who subsequently hired you?
A. I afterwards hired out directly to Dr. Mathewson.

Q. What did you hire out to do?
A. To change over the steam heating.

Q. Who hired you?
A. Dr. Mathewson.

Q. Did you know by what authority he hired you?
A. I didn't ask him, but I supposed because he was the Superintendent of the Asylum.

Q. Tell us what occurred?
A. I started out to change it from a high to low pressure apparatus.

Q. Did the Board of Public Lands and Buildings consult you about it?
A. No, sir.

Q. Dr. Mathewson alone did?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What expense did it cost to change it from these pressures?
A. That is a question I cannot answer, for this reason: that in the first place I went there for A. G. Barnes, and as his hired man. I went up to the capital and met the Board and had a talk about this job, and they referred me to Dr. Mathewson, and I had been to see him previous to that.
A. About what did it cost?

A. That is guess-work. I believe they paid Mr. Barnes somewhere from $650 to $800, or possibly, $900. I don't know that though.

Q. But if you did the work you would have an idea?
A. Somewhere from $600 to $900.

Q. And Dr. Mathewson ordered you to do all that?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you look to nobody else but Dr. Mathewson?
A. No, sir.

Q. You were not an attendant on the ward, or anything of that kind?
A. I had nothing to do with the patients.

Q. You attended to your business pretty closely?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you didn't have much opportunity to look around and see if there was good or hard treatment?
A. I couldn't help seeing it sometimes; the patients would come along where my work was, and they would tell them to go along and sit down.

Q. And while you were at your business you didn't have much opportunity to inspect the Asylum?
A. I had some, because I was all over it.

Q. But then, I mean to inspect the Asylum?
A. I did as a man naturally would in any place that he was at

work. I noticed that the floor was very clean, because I was down on it to work.

Q. Did you notice the treatment of the inmates?
A. I did.

Q. Did you notice that none of them were ever struck?
A. I never saw any of them struck or any occasion to strike.

Q. You never happened to see any of them struck?
A. No, sir.

Q. You wouldn't pretend to swear but what they had been struck?
A. I never swore anything of the kind.

Q. You would not swear that they hadn't been kicked?
A. No, sir.

Q. Or that they hadn't been choked?
A. No, sir; nothing of that kind.

Q. You simply swear that while you were at work there, you didn't happen to see anything of that kind?
A. No, sir; nothing of that sort.

Q. As a matter of course, your business inc hanging this heating apparatus was in the inside of the building?
Q. Yes, sir; some of it, and some of it outside.

Q. Did you always see the patients when they went out to exercise?
A. No, sir; I suppose I saw them from once to three times a week, according to what part of the grounds I was at work at.

Q. You didn't go out to observe?
A. I never did, and couldn't very well. I would frequently see them from once to three times a week, because I was laying a pipe to the boiler-house in a ditch from the Asylum.

Q. When you did see them, it was just a casual seeing?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You didn't watch them all the time they were out there?
A. No, sir.

Q. And didn't see what the treatment was out there?
A. I know what it was when I was around.

Q. When you happened to see it.
A. That is all.

Q. And as a matter of course, you would not stop your work at once there all the time?
A. No, sir.

Q. It would be just a casual glance; what transpired outside of that you don't pretend to testify?
Q. No, sir.

Q. Now you say, once the Doctor came into the ward and talked as a father would talk. Do you remember you testified that?
A. Yes; as he would talk to one of his own boys, eighteen or nineteen years old.

Q. How long were you in that ward previous to that time, engaged in that work?
A. I could not tell you; I might have been there a half an hour or an hour.

Q. How many days, or months, or weeks, had you been engaged there?
A. I had been there, I should say, about a month at that time.

Q. When you heard him come in at that time, was that the only time he talked to the patients in that way?
A. When there was any disturbance. I said they were getting a little billious over some difficulty, and I presume that was about a month after I went there.

Q. That was the only time you ever heard him talk fatherly and kindly?
A. That is the only time in the second ward.

Q. How often did you hear him in the third ward talk fatherly and kindly to them.
A. I think I heard him on four or five different occasions, and probably more.

Q. How long were you acquainted with the third ward.

A. I presume I worked in there off and on—it is pretty hard to tell—four or five days. It was strung out in jobs of from one to three or four hours.

Q. That is a pretty hard ward?

A. It is pretty lively up there.

Q. How long were you engaged in the Asylum in Utica?

A. I was there probably three-fourths of the time for about six weeks.

Q. What was your business there?

A. I was at work for John Carlton, helping him put in the furnaces.

Q. You were not an attendant in the Asylum?

A. No, sir.

Q. You had no other knowledge of the fact in that Asylum, only what you have gathered from putting in the heating apparatus?

A. I had a friend in there as an attendant on one of the wards.

Q. You had no other acquaintance?

A. Not at that time. That is the first time I was ever in anything of the kind. I would be there two or three days, and then away a few days, just according to the work.

Q. That would be about four weeks you were there, then?

A. Yes, sir; altogether.

Q. How long were you in Elgin?

A. I was there about the same length of time?

Q. About four weeks?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, isn't that a very short time in which to judge of the conduct of an institution of that kind.

A. I do not know. If a man is all over a building he is apt to notice what is going on, and if he couldn't get an idea in four weeks he never could.

Q. If he was attending to some other business, as you were, if he

couldn't get it in four weeks, attending to fitting up the pipes, he couldn't get it all?

A. If he couldn't get it in that length of time, I don't think he ever could get it.

Q. Did you ever see anybody struck in New York?

Yes, sir; I saw a man pretty badly whipped one day.

Q. Did you ever see anybody else whipped in New York but that man—I mean a patient?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How many other cases did you hear of?

A. I didn't hear of any.

Q. How many other cases did you see?

A. I saw a boy caned one day in the hall by Dr. Rose.

Q. He was a patient?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you think this institution is a little better managed than that?

A. Yes.

Q. And you saw three caned, or whipped, or slapped, in two or three weeks?

A. I was there longer than that about four weeks.

Q. And this beats that a little?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long were you in Elgin?

A. I was there about the same length of time—about four weeks.

Q. Did you see anybody hit in Elgin?

A. I saw one man choked when out at exercise.

Q. Is that the only case you ever saw there?

A. That is the only one. That was outside of the building, and I saw the same man choked inside the same day when he came back.

Q. Did you see any other outrages?

A. No, sir.

Q. And these two occasions occurred at Elgin, and came under your observation?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you think this a little better managed?

A. Yes, I think so, because I did not see anything wrong.

Q. And you base it on that ground?

A. Yes, sir; to compare this institution with others.

Q. Didn't you think it was cruel?

A. I did—that one man particularly; I didn't know what he was choked for; I didn't see that part of it, but I know he was terribly choked.

Q. Were you working by the day over there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And charged by the day, and was paid by the day, were you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You did day's work?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. If a man does day's work, and gets paid for it, he hasn't much time to look around and see anything else that is going on?

A. If he gets a day's work in ten hours he can't spend much time.

Q. You don't pretend to be an expert, or to have overseen or noticed everything that is going on in the Asylum?

A. No, sir.

J. R. PERKINS.

Testimony of Capt. C. N. Baird.

Capt. C. N. Baird sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What are your name, age, and place of residence?

A. C. N. Baird; age, 49; reside in Lincoln, Lancaster county, Neb.

Q. Have you some knowledge of the management of the Insane Asylum, of Lincoln, Neb.?

A. I have visited that Asylum a great number of times since the fall of '79.

Q. Some relative of yours was a patient there?

A. Yes, sir, there was.

Q. Have you visited other Asylums?

A. I did in the fall of '79.

Q. For what purpose?

A. I wanted to satisfy myself whether I had done the best I could under the circumstances in selecting this Asylum, and I visited the Asylum of Jacksonvile, Illinois, the State Asylum, and also the private Asylum, and I went from there to Batavia, Illinois, and visited the Asylum there, and at Mt. Pleasant, Iowa.

Q. How frequently were you a visitor at this Asylum?

A. I visited I should think from two to three or four times a week for probably two or three months.

Q. You may state for what purpose you visited there.

A. Well, it was to see how my daughter was getting along there, and what kind of treatment and attention she was having.

Q. Your daughter was in the Asylum?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You may state what the treatment by attendants there, as you observed it, was towards the patients of the Asylum?

A. So far as I observed, it seemed to be kind treatment.

Q. You may state how the treatment and general management of the patients in this Asylum compares with the others that you visited?

A. I cannot compare the treatment, because of the Asylums I visited I didn't learn much about them, as it was only for a short time I was at these different places, but I was shown through the wards of those Asylums, and saw the patients, and the general appearance of the hospital.

Q. How did it compare with this?

A. I thought from the general appearance that this was preferable to any that I visited.

Q. Did you visit this Asylum since then—if so, for what purpose?

A. I have visited it a number of times since. We have an Apollo Club here of singers, and the Doctor frequently invites us over to sing for them there on Sunday afternoons, at their chapel exercises. We have been over there several times on such occasions, and I have visited the Asylum sometimes on Christmas eve; and one time my daughter and I assisted them some in preparing Christmas trees.

Q. You may state to what extent or what the treatment of Dr. Mathewson and the attendants is toward these patients as a general rule?

A. From all I have observed I think it is very good. The treatment was good and kind. It seemed to me they were doing all they could for the patients, as far as my knowledge extended.

Q. Through what length of time do your visits to this Institution for the purpose you have mentioned run?

A. Since about September, '79.

Questioned by Mr. Conner:

Q As I understand you when you visited the Asylum at Jacksonville, Illinois, and other places—those were short visits, were they?

A. Yes, sir. I hadn't time to stop long at any place. I spent one day at Jacksonville.

Q. How long at Batavia?

A. I was there about half a day.

Q. That would be a very short time to determine the question of management and control, would it not?

A. Yes; I didn't try to determine that part of it.

Q. You didn't try to determine that at all?

A. No, sir.

Q. So really you do not know what the management and control of this Institution was, do you?

A. No, sir; I cannot say how they managed them or controlled them. I only formed my opinion from the general appearance of the different hospitals, and the conversation with the Superintendents.

Q. Is it not a fact that your observation of the Nebraska Asylum is casual observation, whether it was steady?

A. Well, for awhile, during the time my daughter was there, I made it a good deal of a study. I never had prior to that, any Asylum, though, but I made that a matter of study, and it was a matter of deep concern to me.

Q. It is a fact that you occupy a social position here that would warrant you and your daughter to consideration, is it not?

A. I think we have always had our share of friends here.

Q. Did you examine into the condition of the lower order of patients, and did you make it a matter of inquiry into the poor and the friendless who are insane?

A. I did to some extent.

Q. To what extent?

A. Particularly when they had their Christmas trees prepared, I inquired if provision was always made for the poor and those that had no friends, so that they would be recognized.

Q. That was with reference to the Christmas tree, was it not?

A. Yes. sir; and also in regard to their clothing.

Q. And somethings that are absolutely essential to their comfort?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. But did you make it a point to inquire into the general treatment of that unfortunate class of poor people that might be there outside of these occasions that you speak of?

A. I frequently inquired about them.

Q. Who did you inquire of?

A. I inquired of Dr. Mathewson, and I think also of Dr. Hay and Mr. Taylor.

Q. Did you go through the wards to look and see?

A. Yes, sir; I was there through the wards a number of times.

Q. I mean with reference to looking and inspecting to see if they were cared for?

A. No, sir; I did not.

Q. When you went through the wards with Dr. Mathewson or with Dr. Hay?

A. Yes, sir; or some of the officers.

Q. Some official of the Asylum?

A. Yes, sir; I never went into any of the wards alone.

Q. When your daughter was there, as a matter of course, you had a kind of a supervision of her interests and of her position there, and were very watchful, were you not?

A. I tried to be.

Q. As any parent would be?

A. Just as they naturally would.

Q. You felt a great solicitude and watched the matter very closely so far as your daughter was concerned?

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. The Doctor never refused to let you see your daughter?

A. He always provided a way for me to see her, although he thought it was not wise for me to go in to see her. Sometimes I looked through a keyhole or he got her in some place where I could see her.

Q. What is your occupation here?

A. I am a farmer. That is I live in town but I carry on a farm.

Q. At that time you were a government official?

A. Yes, sir; I was receiver in the land office.

Questioned by Senator Conner:

Q. You belong to the Arion Club of singers?

A. No, sir; the Apollo Club.

Q. When you went there to sing it was on appointed occasions?

A. The Doctor frequently invited us to come there, and when we were to go he would send his team over.

Q. It is all understood over there when you will come.
A. I presume so.

Q. And then you found everything all right?
A. We didn't visit the wards, or I didn't; we simply went into the chapel and sang for the inmates, or assisted them in singing.

Q. Your knowledge of the conduct of this Asylum is based upon what you saw under the circumstances uuder which you have testified here to to-night?
A. Yes, sir; what I saw and in conversation with others.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. You may state if you know whether or not any distinction is made in the treatment of the patients.
A. I did not know of any.

Questioned by Mr. Schoenheit:

Q. When you came there the Dr. always made some provision for to see your daughter in some way?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. He never refused you?
A. No, sir.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. You do not know of any distinction made in the treatment? that is, you don't know it so far as you know?
A. No, sir.

Q. But you don't pretend to testify but what there was a distinction made to you?
A. I don't know whether there was or not. I rather thought there was not from the proposition that I made to the Dr. when I took my daughter there. I had heard that they were short of assistance, and I suggested to him that if he needed any extra help to take care of her, I would be glad to pay for it and furnish the help.

Q. What did the Dr. say?
A. He said that he preferred to have his own help that he had there, and experienced help; it would be better than any that I could send.

Q. Did you ask for an assistant for your daughter outside of what he might furnish?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did the Dr. say it was contrary to the rules to have the patients have assistance and help especially?

A. I understood him so. That is my recollection.

Q. He would not allow of it?

A. No, sir.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Did I make an observation of this kind—that if I had ever so much money, I could not do any better?

A. I think the Dr. made such a remark as that or words to that effect.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. He didn't complain of the Hospital being overcrowded, or short of help or anything of that kind?

A. He did at that time. He complained of being crowded, and they needed more room.

Testimony of J. C. McBride.

J. C. McBride, sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your name, age, occupation and place of residence?

A. My name is Joseph C. McBride—I am 38 years old, and live in Lincoln, and am postmaster here at present.

Q. What position did you hold in this State, or what official position have you sustained to the Asylum, and from what time to what time?

A. I was treasurer of the State from January '75 till '79, about two and a half or three years—I think three years of that time I was

a member of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings, and that Board had control of the State institutions in a large degree.

Q. During that time you may state what your knowledge was and means of knowledge of the treatment which the patients in the Insane Asylum received from the officers and attendants of the Asylum?

A. Well, we made frequent visits there; the Board, and individually, for the purpose of determining the condition of these people, as well as we did at the State Prison, and I believe, so far as I remember, the Board were not at all displeased with the manner in which the prisoners, or inmates of the Asylum were treated. I believe they were satisfied that Dr. Mathewson was treating them humanely.

Q. Do you know Mr. Druse?

A. I do know Mr. Druse?

Q. During that time was he Steward of the institution?

A. He was, a portion of it.

Q. You may state what you know of any complaint—of his making any as to the treatment of the patients at that time?

A. Well, I don't remember that Mr. Druse ever made any complaints. If he did they were of such a character that they didn't impress me at all.

Q. Have you visited the Asylum since your official connection with it ceased?

A. A very few times.

Q. Did you observe the treatment which the patients received?

A. Well, I was a member of the Board. I have not been there, I think, more than once or twice since, but during the time I was a member of the Board I took a considerable interest in that, and I felt a great deal of sympathy for these people and used to be there frequently, and Mr. Druse is a brother-in-law of mine, and we not only visited the Asylum frequently, but often called upon him there.

Q. Well, Mr. Druse was there and you say he was a brother-in-law—can you recall to mind any complaint that he made of the treatment which the inmates of the Asylum received?

A. I do not.

Q. You say you visited him frequently?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You were then on friendly terms?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And during all that time you can recall to mind no complaint that he made?
A. No, sir—not as to treatment of the patients at all—I don't recall any.

Q. Since that time have you heard any of his making?
A. I don't remember as I have. It has been a long while ago and I don't remember. I know Mr. Druse was not on very good terms with Dr. Mathewson after he left there, and said a great many harsh things about it, but I never paid much attention to such things as that.

Q. You may state if you have heard him make any threats; and if so, what?
A. Well, I remember several times when he said that he would get him out of there, and that he would not support this or the other man for Governor unless he would promise to remove the Doctor, or something of that kind.

By Mr. Connor:

Q. What time did Dr. Mathewson go in there?
A. I am not positive about that, but I think it was sometime, probably early, in '77 or '76. It was probably sometime in '76.

Q. It was either in '76 or '77?
A. I think so. I think Dr. Fuller was superintendent when the Board was first organized after the new constitution was adopted, and soon after that it was changed.

Q. What time did you go out of office?
A. I think I went out in January, '79. I think so.

Q. How often as a Board of Public Lands and Buildings did you visit that Institution?

A. I could not any more than approximate it, because I don't remember. At the beginning, shortly after the Board organized, and until we became somewhat familiar with the Institution, we visited it pretty often; probably as often as once a week, and while they were making repairs out there, and such like things as that, we sometimes visited it twice a week; and as to myself, I took rather an active interest in the improvements that were made. I don't remember as any special power was delegated to me by the Board, but I remember the time the water-works were being repaired in one building there, I was there almost daily for two or three weeks.

Q. That was to inspect and look after the water-works?

A. Yes, sir; at that particular time.

Q. You didn't give much thought to the internal management of the Institution at that time?

A. I very seldom went there without going through some part of the building. Sometimes I would inspect the lower part, the kitchen, and look through their supplies, and often go through the wards.

Q. Do you remember of ever asking Dr. Mathewson if anybody was harshly treated?

A. No; I certainly never asked him such a question as that.

Q. Your observation was just confined to what you saw there, was it not?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And not to any inquiry into the internal management of it?

A. I generally made inquiry of some character. If I saw a patient whose actions or condition aroused my curiosity, I asked where they were from.

Q. You never asked the Doctor how he was treating them?

A. No, sir; I never asked anything about it. I very often went through when they were being fed, and went through and saw their food and how it was given to them, and saw the meat.

Q, Did you ever talk with the attendants and ask if anybody was abused there?

A. I don't remember that I ever did.

Q. Is it not a fact that the Board went there for the purpose of

inspecting the building and improvements that were being made more than they did the internal management?

A. We took occasion or at least I did and I can only speak of myself.

Q. I am speaking of the Board and when the Board went there?

A. We went there sometimes as I have said before, to see how the building was progressing or the improvements or to inspect as to its cleanliness, safety, and all those matters.

Q. Can you remember a time that you went there as a Board exclusively for the purpose of looking after the internal management of the institution?

A. You will have to elucidate that question a little more in this respect. I don't understand whether you mean whether we went there to inquire after the condition of the patients.

Q. Yes, sir.

A. I don't think the Board ever went there especially on that matter.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Did you when you were there look after the condition of the patients?

A. As I said before I was always very curious and when I saw anything that attracted my notice, I was very apt to inquire all about it, and I do not know but Dr. Mathewson thought I was a little inquisitive. I usually asked a good many questions as that was all new matter to me, and I knew nothing about insane people.

Q. Did you ever see anything that required inquiry?

A. I don't recall anything that did now. I think Mrs. Daily, who was the matron there talked a little cross once to Dr. Mathewson, but I don't remember that there was any charge of rough treatment of patients ever reported to the Board.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. She talked a little rough about Dr. Mathewson.

A. Yes, they had a little trouble there and they didn't get along very smoothly together, but she complained that the Dr. didn't treat her very nicely, but I didn't hear any complaint about the patients.

Q. These inquiries that you made when you were speaking about having curiosity—they were about where this fellow was from and what was the matter of him?

A. There were some very peculiar cases there—some men that were constantly on the move; some were flopping and slamming about on their seats, and I would ask if he was ever still, and if he sits still when he eats, and do you feed him or does he feed himself, and such questions as that.

Q. You never stopped to see whether he fed himself or whether they fed him?

A. Not a particular one, but I have been present in all of the wards when they ate.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

A. You say Mr. Druse said that he would get the Dr. out of his place; was that for the reason that he was not treating the patients well?

A. No, sir, I think not. Mr. Druse had been discharged. He had been the steward, and I attributed it more to that than to anything else.

Q. Didn't he say at the time that the Dr. treated the patients badly?

A. I don't think he ever told me that.

Q. Mr. Druse never found fault with the Dr. when he was there in the Asylum?

A. Frequently, but not in that connection; it was generally something with regard to the management of the farm, or something of that character; they came in conflict. Mr. Druse thought he as steward ought to have more to say about the farm and the management of stock, and such things as that, than the Dr. accorded him.

Q. Will you swear here that Mr. Druse never told you of bad treatment of these patients?

A. I say so, unqualifiedly.

Q. Before or after he left the Asylum?

A. He may since then, but I don't recall it.

Q. Are you sure that he never mentioned bad treatment to you?

A. He certainly never did, or if he had we would have investigated it. While I was a member of the Board, I felt called upon to do that.

Q. When you went over there singing was it not generally understood that you were to be there at that certain time?

A. I never went there singing; I am not a singer.

Q. Was not the time fixed when you were to go there?

A. Very seldom, indeed.

Q. How much of the time?

A. I don't remember as there was ever—there were a few times that the Board met there by agreement, and sometimes we would adjourn at a certain date to meet the next day at a certain hour—perhaps at 3 o'clock.

Q. No special appointment was made with the Board and the Dr. when you were to come there?

A. Sometimes I say there was.

Q. I ask you now how much of the time?

A. I could not remember that. I should think probably as many as a dozen times the Board met over there when they knew we were coming.

Q. And you had some fine treatment when you were there—as dinners, and so on?

A. Dr. Mathewson treats everybody well that goes to the Asylum. He always treated the Board very well. I assure you of that.

Q. His situation depended upon your good will?

A. No, sir; I think in a manner probably it did, but he was not dependent upon the Board at all for his position. He was appointed by the Governor.

Q. Did the Gov. belong to the Board?

A. No, sir.

Q. Was the Gov. with you when you went there generally?

A. I don't remember that he was, but he might have been on one or two occasions. I think probably he was on one or two occasions.

Q. How often while you were in that position did you visit the Asylum?

A. That I could not tell you. I visited there very often personally, and the Board also visited quite often. I don't remember how often, but I should think on an average probably once or twice a month.

Q. You are a particular friend towards the Dr.?

A. I cannot say that I was. I am friendly towards the Dr. He and I have always been reasonably good friends, but I didn't always agree with him in some things that were done about the Asylum, and I think the Dr. will bear me out in that.—that we didn't always agree. I never knew him until he came here.

Q. In what did that disagreement consist?

A. In various matters—that is at least in several. I thought there ought to be a Matron there, and the Dr. thought they didn't need it, and we used to talk over it frequently, and a good many other little things.

Q. Do you remember of Mrs. Daily being there?

A. Oh, yes, sir, very well.

Q. Was there any Matron there after her—after she was discharged?

A. My recollection was that there was while I was on the Board. Still I am not positive about that.

Q. Then there was no Matron there after Mrs. Daily left?

A. She was not discharged as I understand, but she resigned and there was none appointed.

Q. Do you remember the reason she resigned?

A. I do not.

Q. There was no Matron appointed after that?

A. Not that I remember of. I think she only left there a few months probably before my term of office expired, so that I have no recollection about that, but my recollection is that the position was vacant at the time that I went out of office.

Q. Didn't you think it was entirely proper to have a Matron?

A. I did.

Q. What do you mean by a Matron—explain?

A. Well, the Matron of the institution was in a manner a mother to the people there.

A. And had general supervision?

A. Over the female portion of it more particularly, and looked after the patients' clothing, and kept it in repair, und the washing, and all their little wants, and I thought it was necessary te have somebody, and always thought so.

Q. Since that time it was only the female attendants?

A. I do not know how it has been since then.

Q. Was the matron entirely dependent for her situation on the Doctor?

A. I am not quite clear on that. I do not know as she was and still she may have been. I think the Governor appoints the matron and the steward. I know he did the steward and I think he did the matron.

A. You have no knowledge why there was other matron appointed there?

A. No, sir; I do not recall. There may have been one appointed, but I do not know that there was.

A. According to your opinion there ought to be a matron about such an institution?

A. I do. I am very firmly impressed with that idea.

MISS SARAH GILMORE, recalled.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. I wish to ask you in reference to Mary Bubb—the patient that it was said I choked. Do you remember that night I came up and helped you getting her to bed?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You and Mary Byers was both present?

A. Yes, sir, we were.

Q. You called on me, I believe?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was the occasion of your calling on me?
A. Because she refused to undress to go to bed.

Q. Why didn't you go in and undress her?
A. Well, we were afraid to.

Q. What happened there after we came up?
A. You told her to undress and she wouldn't do it, and you put your hand under her chin and laid her head back ,and placed your hand on her mouth, but you did not choke her.

Q. You are sure of that?
A. I was there.

Q. Who took off her shoes?
A. I believe Miss Byers took them off.

Q. Then what did I do after the shoes were off?
A. You retired from the room and we had her undressed?

Q. I was outside the room?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did I wait there?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Until you brought the clothes out?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Then what did I do?
A. I believe you left the hall.

Q. I want to ask you whether my wife gave any special attention to Mrs. Kaufman during her last sickness?
A. Yes, sir, she did. She came in frequently to see her and brought food into her and fed her.

Q. How frequently did she come in?
A. She came in as much as three or four times a day when she was in her last illness?

Q. Did she give special attention to her case?

A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. In what position was the woman when he quieted her—when he put his hand on her mouth?
A. She was on the floor.

Q. Where was the Dr. standing?
A. He was standing just back of her.

Q. Behind her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now, where was Miss Byers standing?
A. She was standing at her feet, I believe.

Q. Where were you standing?
A. I don't know just where I was standing, but I was right there.

Q. Were you not close to the Dr. or beside the Dr?
A. I was not behind the Dr; no, sir.

Q. What position did you stand there?
A. I was probably standing at her side.

Q. Did you hold the patient's hand or touch her anywhere as the Dr. was managing her?
A. No, sir, I don't think I did.

Q. Show where he had his hands, particularly of the patient you say he had his hands over her mouth?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Show us how it was done?
A. He simply placed his hand over her mouth.

Q. Are you sure he had his hand on her throat?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You are sure of that?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You were quite close to it?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And Miss Byers was there too?
A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Is she a vulgar talking patient?
A. She was.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. Are you sure that he had not his hand at her throat at all?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did Mary Byers hold the patient's hands?
A. I don't remember that she did. I don't think she did.

Q. You are not positive where you were standing?
A. No, sir, I am not.

Q. You don't remember anything positively except the position of the Dr's hand over the patient's mouth, do you?
A. That was all he did.

Q. That part you remember distinctly?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. But as to the actual facts, you cannot tell particularly?
A. No, sir.

Q. Now, what position do you hold in that Hospital?
A. I am an attendant.

Q. Your position depends on Dr. Mathewson?
A. I presume it does?

Q. And he has the power to discharge you if he has a mind to?
A. Certainly.

Q. How long have you been there?
A. I have been there almost eleven months.

Q. Did you see Miss Byers there within a week or two?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you speak to her at that time?
A. I simply passed the time of day with her.

Q. Was the Dr. there when you saw her?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you see the Doctor prevent her from speaking to you or saying anything to her?
A. Well, no. I do not believe he prevented her from speaking to me.

Q. Didn't he tell her to leave the place?
A. I think he did.

Q. Have you any reason to believe why he did that, or any means of knowing?
A. No, sir.

WILL. H. GREEN—*re-called.*

Questioned by Dr. Mathewson:

Q. Has there ever an attendant asked you to hold a patient, so that they might whip her?
A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. You may state what occurred between you and Miss Byers while she was an attendant—while she was in discharge of her duty at the Asylum, relating to one Mrs. Bubb, a patient?

Senator Schoenhite objected, because it is improper, for the reason that Miss Byers, when she testified, had not had her attention called to that fact, and had no opportunity to explain.

A. I was working in the dining room in the 2d female ward, painting, and Miss Byers came to me two, if not more, different times, asking if I would not hold this patient that was locked in her room while she whipped her. She said that she had slapped her and pulled her hair, and she had called on Dr. Mathewson for assistance, and he came and put her into her room and let her remain. I asked why she did not slap her back; she remarked, "I am not ready to leave just now; if I should hit her, the Doctor would dismiss me, for he dismissed an attendant on the 3d ward for slapping a patient a few weeks before," and I

told her I was not hired to hold patients, and I desired her to go to Dr. Mathewson if her partner could not assist her.

Q. Did she give any reason why she didn't go to Dr. Mathewson to complain?

A. Yes, sir; because the Superintendent told her, if she needed any assistance, to call on him in regard to this patient.

Q. Did she say why she did not call on him?

A. Because she knew he would not come.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. Where were you when she came after you?

A. I was in the dining room.

Q. What were you doing?

A. Painting.

Q. Where was this ward from the dining room?

A. The dining room is on the west of the ward as you enter of all the wards in the house. The first door is the dining room door.

Q. You had never done anything of that kind in the Asylum, had you?

A. No, sir.

Q. You had never presumed to lay your hand on a patient before?

A. No, sir.

Q. It was understood all over the Asylum, was it not, that you was there as a painter and not as an attendant?

A. Certainly.

Q. Miss Byers understood that, did'nt she?

A. Yes, sir, she did.

Q. And still she came to you, a painter, outside of your business there, and asked you to take hold of this patient and hold her until she whipped her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you swear to that?

A. I do.

Q. Who else was present there?
A. A lady who was just on the witness stand.

Q. Did the lady that was on the witness stand hear what was said?

A. Yes, sir; she was standing in my presence when she asked me. She asked me if I would not hold the patient while she whipped her, or pounded her.

Q. You would have to leave your work to do that?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. How far?
A. I think three or four rooms down the hall.

Q. She said to hold her while she whipped her or pounded her.
A. Pounded her was the remark, I think, she made.

Q. Did you ever report that to Dr. Mathewson?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever say anything about it?
A. Never; I never paid any attention to it—it is out of my line of business.

Q. I cannot understand why she should come to you, if it was out of your line of business?

A. She wanted me to hold her so that she could pound her; she thought that the Superintendent would not know it, and she said the Doctor would dismiss me, for he dismissed an attendant on the same ward a few weeks before for striking a patient. She said that the patient had hit her and pulled her hair, and she could not do anything with her because she was a very robust woman, and I doubt if I can handle her.

Q. But you did'nt want the opportunity?
A. No, sir.

Q. You would have called that an act of cruelty if the attendant pounded her?
A. Certainly I would.

Q. Then you thought she was a cruel attendant, did'nt you?
A. No.

Q. To want to do that—to pound her—would'nt you consider her a cruel attendant?
A. Not under all of the circumstances.

Q. And under these circumstances?
A. I would not consider it cruel if she had hit her back, after she had pulled her hair.

Q You would have considered it cruel if she hit her after she came to you?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. She was a cruel attendant?
A. She was not considered so. This was the only instance I ever saw.

Q. In that instance she was cruel?
A. Undoubtedly she was.

Q. How long did she remain there after that?
A. I think two days after that, and the Doctor removed her to the upper ward, and she said how long will I remain there, and he said as long as you would like to stay.

Q. Did you stop to listen?
A. No, sir; I went right on, and he said I would like to have you go up stairs. She remarked in the same breath for how long, and he said as long as she wanted to stay there, and he unlocked the door and let me in.

Questioned by Senator Schoenhite:

Q. Was Miss Gilmore there, and heard this conversation?
A. She heard her ask me to come in and hold her.

Q. She heard it asked?
A. She heard the attendant ask me.

Q. What did Miss Gilmore say at the time Miss Byers asked you to hold the patient so that she could pound her?
A. She made no answer at all. Her attention was called in the hall.

Q. Didn't Miss Gillmore laugh at the time?
A. She smiled, yes.

Q. You are an unmarried man?
A. No, sir; I am a married man.

Q. Did Miss Byers know that fact?
A. I presume so; she ought to. I had not told her.

Q. Didn't she tell her in joke about that woman?
A. She was in earnest—dead earnest. If she ever was earnest, she was earnest then, because she was half mad.

Q. You were in earnest too?
A. I certainly was when I told her Dr. Mathewson attend to that, or that I was not hired for that purpose.

Q. You were half mad?
A. No, sir, I was not out of humor.

Q. You was not in humor?
A. It did not have any particular effect on my feelings asking me that, because I knew it was not any of my business.

MISS SARAH GILMORE—*re-called.*

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Did you hear this conversation just testified to?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he state it substantially as you heard it?
A. Yes, sir; as I heard it.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. Did you ever tell the Dr. about this?
A. No, sir, I did not.

Q. Did you ever report Miss Byers at the time for talking that way?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did Miss Byers tell the whole thing in a joke?
A. No, sir, I am confident she was in earnest.

Q. Did she not take that opportunity simply to talk to that young man, and make an opportunity to get talking to the young man? You never made any report to the Dr.?
A. No, sir.

Q. You do not think it was a cruel idea to make such a proposition to the painter?
A. I think it would have been very cruel.

Q. The idea of itself was cruel, was it not?
A. I think it was.

Q. Don't you think a person would hardly be fit to be around a Lunatic Asylum who had such ideas?
A. I think not.

DR. J. T. HAY SWORN.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. Could these cases of injury and personal cruelty which have been testified to have occurred at the Asylum and you not have known of the injuries and the fact?
A. Do you refer to any particular?

Q. I refer to all these cases of injury which have been testified to?
A. It would be impossible for a patient to be bruised except very slightly without it coming to our knowledge.

Q. When you say our knowledge what do you mean?
A. I mean my own and Dr. Mathewson's.

Q. It would be impossible to get bruised except very slightly without your having knowledge of it?
A. Yes, sir.

Questioned by Senator Schoenheit:

Q. Can cruelty exist in the Lunatic Asylum without wounds and bruises?

A. O! I think it might to a certain extent. A person could be choked without leaving any marks.

Q. And common insult in language and action?
A. Yes.

Q. I mean treatment—that is, I mean without wounds and bruises?
A. It might occur occasionally perhaps, but not very often.

Questioned by Senator Connor:

Q. Now you say that a prisoner could not be bruised without your knowing it?
A. Not any severe bruises.

Q. Did you always go to see them undress and examine them personally in reference to bruises?
A. I often do.

Q. I ask you if you always do?
A. I did not examine them every day except about the face.

A. Might not they have bruises about the body and you not know it?
A. O! just slight bruises.

Q. Might not they have severe bruises?
A. No, sir, because they would complain to me, and I strip them.

Q. Do you always undress them and look to see?
A. If they complain, I do.

Q. And they might have bruises and you not know it?
A. Certainly—slight bruises.

Adjourned.

Testimony of Robert Hooker.

Robert Hooker sworn:

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your name, age, and place of residence?
A. My name is Robert Hooker, age 48, and occupation a plumber.

Q. State if you have been about the Asylum at Lincoln, Nebraska?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. For how long?
A. I worked at the Asylum perhaps altogether may be eight or nine months; but from the 1st of November last to the 1st of April I was there all the time, and have been employed casually —as a week and two weeks or so at a time.

Q. In the various wards?
A. In every ward; in every place.

Q. Have you observed the treatment of the attendants and officers towards the patients?
A. I have.

Q. Will you state your means of observation, and then state what the treatment is—whether it is kind, mild, and firm, or domineering, and severe and cruel?
A. According to my opinion, the patients are well treated. They are well fed, and cleanliness is most strictly attended to, and I have seen a great number of humane acts; I may say, on the part of the officers especially, and some of the attendants. I have never seen but one case in any way pertaining to any violence at all during the whole time I have been there.

Q. What was that?
A. It was a young man who was in the habit of making his escape, and very often when escaping he came into the engine house where I was employed, and on this date—I cannot swear

to the date, but it must have been cold because he came in to warm his hands, and one of the attendants came in and took hold of him by the hands and pushed him to the door, and he turned around and the attendant seized hold by the handkerchief and pushed him against the wall. I thought at the time that was a little rougher than it need to be, and I told him to leave him alone, and whether his attention was taken by what I said or not, but the patient let out at him and gave him two pretty good straight blows.

Q. Did the attendant strike back?

A. No, sir; he did not.

Q. And the patient struck two pretty good straight blows?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the attendant pushed him against the wall and then the patient struck him?

A. Yes, sir; that is the only actual case.

Q. How long have you been there?

A. About eight months altogether; the eight months last past.

Q. You have worked in every ward?

A. Yes, sir; and every place in the house.

Q. Your means of observing their treatment when out for exercise—what was that?

A. I had'nt much oportunity to observe. My work was chiefly inside.

Q. Have you worked in other insane asylums?

A. I have; many of them in England, that is, you must understand the institutions are differently classed there to what this is. You probably would'nt find a parallel to this in the old country, because they are more divided up but similar institutions to this. The idiots are placed by themselves, and the lunatics, unless very crazy, are kept in the poor houses there.

Q. State how the treatment here is in regard to kindness and gentility compared with those other institutions in which you have worked—on the part of the attendants?

A. When we consider the treatment of the patients, it is quite on a par with any I have seen. The food certainly is vastly better than it was in England, in such institutions. The clothing I do not think is quite so good, but so far as the sanitary welfare is concerned, it is more strictly observed here than any place I ever saw, considering the means that they have.

Q. In other institutions they have about two attendants to three patients?

A. In some of them they are very numerous, in what we call the mad houses or bedlam.

By Senator Schoenheit:

Q. What was your business there?

A. A plumber, and I assisted in the engine house last winter and did plumbing work some.

Q. You have been there about eight months?

A. Eight months in all.

Q. Were you staying there all the time?

A. From the 1st of November to the 1st of April, I was there all the time.

Q. That was a year ago?

A. A year ago in November until the 1st or 4th of April.

Q. You have not been there since?

A. Yes, sir; several times for a few days and sometimes a week at a time.

Q. But at that time you stayed there all the time and were there continually?

A. Yes, sir.

By Senator Rogers:

Q. Did you ever hear it talked among the attendants or those about there, of any ill usage of the patients?

A. I cannot say that I have. I cannot swear that I have.

By Senator Schoenheit:

Q. Were you around the female ward to know what was going on there?

A. Yes, sir; every hour in the day I was through some of the wards. I was called most constantly.

Q. You did'nt see anything of any kind except the case you have stated?

A. No, sir.

Q. Were you up nights any time?

A. Yes, sir; all winter I was up at three o'clock, at half-past three and four o'clock in the morning.

Q. Did you see Dr. Mathewson around nights?

A. Yes, many times, and I saw the Doctor through there mornings at four o'clock all over the house and in the engine house and all around.

Q. There could not hardly anything occur between the attendants and the patients but what he saw?

A. It would not be for want of looking if he did not see it.

Q. If anything occurred that was irregular he must have seen it?

A. I think so.

Q. He was generally there when the patients marched out?

A. That never came under my observation.

Testimony of William Ashton.

Examined by Judge Mason:

Q. W at is your name, age, occupation, and place of residence?

A. My name is William Ashton, a plumber and gas fitter, age forty-eight, and residence Lincoln.

Q. Have you been about the Insane Asylum some?

A. Yes, I have been there since Dr. Mathewson has been there about six months.

Q. Off and on or at one time?

A. Off and on. I was there probably three months at one time.

Q. At what time was that?

A. That was in the spring of 1880; I think about three years ago this time.

Q. Working in the wards?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In the various wards of the Institution?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you have the means of observing the treatment of the patients by the attendants?

A. Yes, I had the means of seeing anything that was going on.

Q. And the treatment of the officers to the patients?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. State what that treatment was which you saw, whether it was firm and kind, or whether is was cruel or rough?

A. I did not see anything while I was there but what was kind and as I thought nothing more than reasonable.

Q. Did you see during that time an attendant strike a patient with a doubled fist?

A. No, sir I do not remember.

Q. Or kick them?

A. One kicked me one day pretty hard.

Q. An attendant or patient?

A. A patient.

Q. But did you see any patient kicked by an attendant?

A. No, sir, I did not see anything worse than just pushing or pulling them to take a seat, or something of that kind.

Q. Or to their rooms?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What do you say the treatment of the officers and attendants is to patients as you observed it? Kind and gentle or cruel and severe?

A. I did not see anything that was out of the way. I did not see any cruelty on the part of the officers while I was there.

Q. You were there three months at one time and your other three months is made up of off and on times?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And the other times was what?
A. It was made up of a few days at a time.

Q. And during these few days at a time you were in each ward?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. This six months covers what length of time—from what time, to what time?
A. I do not hardly remember that.

Q. Two years or eighteen months?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you there when Mr. Lawson was there?
A. Mr. Lawson, a patient? Yes, sir.

Q. I believe some witness swore that Mr. Lawson helped you put up the gas works?
A. Mr. Lawson, a brother of this patient.

Q. You remember the patient Lawson?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. State if you ever saw any cruel treatment towards him and what the talk was around the wards?
A. No, I did not see anything cruel towards him. They seemed to be a little afraid of him in some way. He seemed to be a strong, powerful man and he seemed to be of an ugly disposition, and I thought probably it was because he did not know any better.

Q. And the attendants seemed to be afraid of him?
A. Yes, they seemed to think he was the worst case they had there.

Q. You were there how long while he was there?
A. I think probably I was there three months while he was there. In the three months I was in the female wards and part of the time

I was in the male wards and and of course it would not be three months that I would see him. I was there three months but I did not see him more than probably two or three weeks.

Q. I understand you to say you were in every ward while you were there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You put in the plumbing in the building?

A. Yes, sir.

By Senator Schoenheit:

Q. You say you did not see any cruel treatment?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or anything that was out of the way?

A. No, sir.

Q. You were there from what time?

A. About three years ago, about this time.

Q. Were you there continually during that time or off and on?

A. I was there three months steady and before that I was there two weeks at one time and a few days at a time perhaps.

Q. What time were you there after that?

A. That was the last time I was there.

Q. Three years ago?

A. Yes, this spring three years ago.

Q. You do not pretend to swear that some cruelty might not have been exercised there without your seeing it?

A. There might have been something that I could not see, but I was around the wards most of the time passing back and forth from one story to another putting up pipes, and I had to go up to the next story to get pipes connected and it kept me going more or less all the time.

Testimony of Mrs. Mary McCurdy.

Mrs. Mary McCurdy, sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason.

Q. Are you an attendant at the Asylum?
A. No, sir; I have charge of the sewing department.

Q. Have you been in other Asylums?
A. Yes, sir, the Oshkosh Asylum.

Q. How long were you there?
A. Eight months.

Q. Did you observe or have you the means of observing the treatment of the patients there?
A. The first three months I had.

Q. And here?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You may state what the treatment of these patients here is by the attendants and officers?
A. I have seen nothing but kindness and gentleness.

Q. How does it compare with those other institutions that you have been in?
A. It compares well.

Q. And favorably?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know Mr. Nelson?
A. I do.

Q. You may now state if you had a conversation with Mr. Nelson about Dr. Mathewson in the Insane Asylum, and if so, state what he said.
A. It was two weeks ago Sunday.

Senator Schoenheit:

I object to that because Mr. Nelson's attention was not called properly that point.

A. He said he had been a spy in the institution the last year, and Mr. Hollenbeck had been his ally for six months. That Dr. Mathewson had treated him like a dog and he must get out of here.

Q. Who did he mean by *he*—that *he* must get out of here?
A. Dr. Mathewson.

Q. When was this conversation?
A. Two weeks ago Sunday.

Q. Whereabouts?
A. In the sewing room.

By Senator Schoenheit:

Q. How long were you there at the Asylum?
A. It will be four months the 1st day of March.

Q. You swear here that you have not seen anything that was out of order or bad treatment either by the officers or attendants?
A. I never have.

Testimony of W. B. Young.

W. B. Young sworn:

Q. By Senator Rogers:

Q. What is your occupation?
A. Attendant.

Q. That would make your residence at the Asylum?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What do you know pertaining to this matter that we are investigating as to treatment of prisoners there? Was it barbarous, and rough, or unusual treatment in any way?
A. So far as I have seen it is good.

By Dr. Mathewson:

Q. What institutions have you been employed in?
A. I have been in the Michigan Asylum, at Kalamazoo.

Q. Compared with the Michigan Asylum, how is the treatment of the patients here?

A. Just as good, and in some respects it is better.

Q. In what respects?

A. The officers I think show the patients more respect.

Q. Have you seen any abuse of the patients since you have been here?

A. No, sir, I have not.

Q. How long were you in that Asylum?

A. I was there nineteen months.

Q. In what capacity?

A. Attendant.

Q. And you are on duty here now?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In which ward?

A. I have been on the third ward, and I am on the second ward now.

Q. And you have been on what other ward?

A. The first ward.

Q. You have been on the three wards?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How is it as to the treatment of the attendants towards the patients on all of those wards?

A. So far as I have seen it is good.

Q. How long have you been an attendant in this Asylum?

A. I came the 29th of December I think it was.

By Senator Rogers:

Q. In the treatment of violent patients, would you consider it abuse if they were kicked or struck or unnecessarily thrown to the ground, or if any efforts were used more than to restrain and place them where they should be in their wards?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You would consider it abuse if any other treatment was given?

A. Yes, sir, any unnecessary force.

Q. You know of none having been used by the attendants?

A. No, sir.

TESTIMONY OF G. M. BARTLETT.

G. M. Bartlett sworn.

Questioned by Judge Mason:

Q. What is your name, age, occupation, and place of residence?

A. My name is—I write it G. M. Bartlett; my age is 52; my occupation is clerk in the State Treasurer's office; I live in the city of Lincoln.

Q. What official relation did you sustain formerly to the Insane Asylum, and from what time to what time did you sustain that relation?

A. I was a member of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings created by the new constitution, from January 1879 to January 1883.

Q. Did you inform yourself or were you informed of the treatment of the inmates and patients of the Insane Asylum by the attendants?

A. During my visits there I never saw anything that led me to think there was any cruelty there. I never heard of any complaint to the Board. My recollection is that there never was any complaint made to the Board of cruelty at the Asylum during my time on the Board.

Q. How frequently did you visit the Institution?

A. That is a little hard to tell. I had considerable to do there. We have built two additions to the building since I have been a member of the Board, and one is not quite finished yet, and dur-

ing that time we have had to be there off and on as the work needed on the building, and always while we were there, we took pains to look the institution through.

Q. When you say looked it through, did you look it through for the purpose of ascertaining the treatment which the patients received from the attendants, and how their various duties were discharged?

A. I know we went out one time—there was a discharged patient, or one that I called discharged, that had left the institution, and he came to me and complained to the Board that they did not have anything to eat, and that they had not had any butter I believe he said for three months. That is my recollection, but I may be mistaken as to the length of time. The same day the Board went out to the institution. Of course we did not make known what our business was and we looked the provision business over pretty thoroughly, and interviewed the cook and interviewed the attendants, and particularly as to what they did have to eat during the last thirty days, and we found that during one week of that time there was a scarcity of butter, and he had laid particular stress that they had no butter. My recollection is that one week butter was scarce to get, and they did not have any surplus, but otherwise, from anything we could learn, they had their usual allowance, and from anything we could see, they were well fed. We went through the pantry and milk room, and through the cellar and meat room, and found that they had a good supply of anything that was wholesome and good, and we went back satisfied that they had enough to eat.

Q. How as to inquiry of the treatment which the patients received at the hands of the attendants and officers?

A. My observation always was, and my convictions were, from anything that I have ever seen there, that they are well treated.

Q. Did you ever hear anything of the control?

A. I never have heard any complaint to the Board or anything that ever led me to think that it was necessary to investigate.

Questioned by Senator Connor.

Q. Generally when you went there it was for the purpose of examining the matter of construction or improvements that were going on?

A. Not always; no, sir.

Q. I say generally?

A. No, not generally.

Q. Then what did you generally go for?

A. We went with the view to look at the building outside and inside, or anything that needed to be seen to.

Q. Do you remember any occasion when you went for the purpose of seeing whether the inmates were treated properly or not?

A. We have been there frequently to look the thing over to see if we were satisfied that everything was in good shape. We never went there to view if we could see anybody with a black eye, or broken leg, or a broken rib.

Q. I ask you if you ever went there as a Board especially to see if the patients were mistreated?

A. We have been there to see how they were treated.

Q. Did you ever go there when you started with the idea of inquiring whether the inmates were mistreated?

A. We never did.

Q. Now you say you never went to see if they had a black eye or not—did you ever hear that anybody had a black eye or was mistreated?

A. I have seen such accounts in the papers. No, I do not know that I ever saw anybody have a black eye.

Q. What did you see in the papers?

A. I could not state just now what.

Q. Substantially what?

A. I have occasionally seen in some of the Lincoln papers that there was something wrong at the Asylum.

Q. What paper?
A. I could not state now.

Q. About when?
A. I could not tell you that.

Q. Did you called the attention of the Board to it?
A. We have talked it over.

Q I ask you if you called the attention of the Board to the fact that you had seen those notices?
A. Perhaps the Board had called my attention.

Q. I ask you if you called the attention of the Board to it?
A. I perhaps may. I do not remember now as I did.

Q. You cannot remember the paper and you can not remember the special charge, can you?
A. I could not give it now.

Q. Can you remember that when you saw those notices in the paper that you called the Board together, and went over and examined into the charges made in those papers?
A. I do not know that we ever went there expressly to examine anything that we had seen in the papers. We have been there with the express purpose of looking the institution through in regard to whether they had enough to eat, and whether they had good beds to sleep in, and whether they had sufficient water in the wards in case of fire, and whether they had sufficient attendants, and in a general way for their comfort.

Q. When you saw these notices in the papers did you not think it was direct notice to the Board of Public Lands and Buildings, of which you were a member?
A. It might have been a notice.

Q. Your visits then to look at the Asylum were to look after the bedding and food, and the general treatment in that line?
A. To a certain extent it was. That was not the only business.

Q. And it is to look at the building and its surroundings there?

A. You of course will understand that a Board has a great many things to look after at such an Institution. I think the Board took particular pains, so far as I can remember, to look the Institution over carefully and see if they were satisfied with the looks of things generally, as to cleanliness and the general appearance of things, and from my knowledge there never was any dissatisfaction on the Board, or that I ever found any.

Q. Did you inquire when you went over there if anybody was kicked?

A. I never did.

Q. Or if anybody was hit?

A. I never did.

Q. Or if anybody was maltreated?

A. No, sir.

Q. You simply would go through there to see in a general way that it looked all right to the eye?

A. I have talked with the patients occasionally when I have been there if they ever had any trouble with the men, and I have frequently said to them that where there are so many men, they would be likely to get into fights sometimes, and such conversation as that.

Q. Is it not a fact that you have heard rumors for years, ever since shortly after Dr. Mathewson took charge of the Insane Asylum—is it not a fact that you have heard rumors of bad treatment to the insane?

A. Well, there have been such rumors ever since the Asylum was started, more or less.

Q. Has there not been ever since Dr. Mathewson took charge of it or shortly after?

A. There has been, I suppose, some fault found; I do not deny it.

Q. Do you remember of ever hearing any specific charges made?

A. No, sir.

Q. That a patient was treated bad in this or that respect?

A. I never have; no, sir.

Q. From whom did you hear those rumors?

A. I could not state. I do not pretend to say that I have heard any specific charges of severe cruelty at the Asylum since Dr. Mathewson was there.

Q. Or of cruelty?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or neglect?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you pretent to say that you have not heard such charges?

A. Nothing that I counted from any source that was reliable.

Q. Anything that put you on the alert or led you to investigate and inquire whether these things might or might not be so?

A. I suppose they have stimulated the Board to look more carefully over there. That would be the natural result and natural consequence.

Q. But if you had no reliance in them, why would it stimulate you?

A. I mean that if I saw the piece in the paper, I would not make up my mind it was so, but after going out there and looking the thing over, a man would naturally make up his mind about how much reliance could be placed in some such thing. I never saw anything in the Asylum while I was a member of the Board that led me to think that there was any neglect there or any cruelty to the patients.

Q. In your office did you hear of the cruel treatment—what is alleged as cruel treatment of Searle?

A. I did not.

Q. You never heard of that, did you?

A. I do not recollect it now.

Q. Did you ever hear of a man being hit in the butt of the ear with a brickbat?

A. Not until since this investigation came up.

Q. Or did you ever hear of a man that took a mortar hoe being violently assaulted?
A. No, sir.

Q. You never heard of any of those things?
A. No, sir.

Q. What were the character of the newspaper reports that you saw?
A. I could not tell you. I do not remember.

Q. They were published in the daily papers of this city?
A. I presume so, but I do not recollect. In a good many of our Nebraska papers we get a good deal of sensational news.

Q. And you put it on the ground of sensational news?
A. I did not say so.

Q. But you say you get a good deal of sensational news in that connection; do you mean to infer that that was sensational?
A. It might have been.

Q. Did you go to the editor of the paper that published that, to inquire who was the author of the article?
A. I did not—no, sir.

Statement of the Defense.

The Senate Committee for the investigation of the management of the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane, were by the Senate ordered and directed to take such evidence as Dr. Mathewson might wish to offer, and being pressed for time, said committee could not take further evidence; and thereupon, on behalf of Dr. Mathewson, there was filed the affidavits of the following named persons: Mrs. M. Shelley, Thomas W. Ritchey, J. T. Clark, Thos. A. Evans, W. M. Oyler, Mrs. Katie Forman, Clarence True, O. L. Anderson, Miss M. Baldwin, Edward N. Searle, John C. Hall, Mrs. Robert Brown, Miss Mattie Reed, Mary Allen. Also, a

statement from the daily records of the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane, showing the condition each day they were in the Insane Hospital, of Charles Hoffman, Henry Hettrick, James C. Parks, and Dora Stately; also, the copy of the By-Laws of the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane, which was offered in evidence before said committee; also, the affidavit of Thomas Byrne, which was offered in evidence before said committee; much more evidence of patients who have been discharged as cured, and of others still in the Hospital could be adduced, and the strictest and most vigilant inquiries, watchfulness and investigation is solicited and earnestly desired. It will be found no act of cruelty or neglect has been done or committed at said Hospital by an attendant that has not been punished by the prompt discharge of the attendant.

STATEMENT OF MRS. M. SHELLEY.

NEBRASKA HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE,
FEBRUARY 26th, 1883.

Have been a patient in this Hospital for two months, and willingly and cheerfully give my testimony as to the treatment of myself and all other patients with whom I have come in contact. They are universally treated with kindness and consideration; their complaints, however unreasonable, are listened to with patience and attention, and relief and sympathy given when possible. The sick receive especial care from both Dr. Mathewson and his assistant, Mrs. Mathewson coming in to see and personally attend to their wants. The attendants have strict orders as to medicine, nourishment, and everything necessary for their welfare. I was here previous to this time for eight months in '76–77. The cleanliness, order, and sanitary condition of the Hospital compare most favorably with that time; good and abundant food, warm, clean beds. No abuses of any kind or ill treatment of any patient have come under my observation by either attendants or officers. Those patients who are capable of

judging for themselves seem to have perfect confidence in their mode of treatment, and express themselves satisfied.

MRS. M. SHELLEY.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me, this 26th day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,
[SEAL.] *Notary Public.*

STATEMENT OF THOMAS W. RITCHIE.

Thomas W. Ritchie, age 42, occupation farmer, residence Sarpy county.

This is to certify that I have been a patient in the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane for the last three years; I have been treated as well as the officers of the institution have; I have never seen any abuse of patients in any manner whatever. I am a brother-in-law of ex-representative John W. Tafe.

THOMAS W. RITCHIE.

February 26, 1883, Asylum, Lancaster county, Nebraska.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me, this 26th day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,
[SEAL.] *Notary Public.*

DEPOSITION OF J. T. CLARK.

Residence, Omaha, Nebraska; age, forty-two years; I have been a patient in the Hospital for Insane since April 27th, 1882. Am perfectly satisfied with the treatment I have received from Dr. Mathewson, and all the officers and attendants; have never

seen any one choked, struck, or kicked, since I have been here; am perfectly satisfied with the food; consider it good, wholesome, and yet plenty of it. The Doctor has taken me to ride with him whenever convenient; think I have had just as good treatment as I would have had at home.

J. T. CLARK.

Nebraska Hospital for the Insane, Feb. 26, 1883.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me, this twenty-sixth day of February, A.D. h883.

[SEAL.] A. K. WEBSTER.
Notary Public.

STATEMENT OF THOS. A. EVANS.

ASYLUM, NEB., February 26, 1883.

I, Thomas A. Evans, aged thirty-four years, have been employed as baker at the Asylum for ten months; I have had every opportunity of observing the treatment of the patients by the officers of the Institution, and I have alwavs found it uniformly kind and humane. I never saw any acts of cruelty, and often in conversation with Dr. Mathewson, he has told me to do all I could for the patients, as they were the ones that the Institution was intended to benefit; and I have often heard Dr. Mathewson say that he felt pity for the poor unfortunates under his charge, and he seemed to me to treat them as a father would his children.

THOMAS A. EVANS.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me, this twenty-sixth day of February, A.D. h883.

[SEAL.] A. K. WEBSTER,
Notary Public.

STATEMENT OF WM. M. OYLER.

William M. Oyler, age thirty-one; occupation, engineer; residence, Asylum.

I have been employed in the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane as engineer for the space of seven years; my duties in that capacity have called me to all parts of the building; I have had free access to all the wards at any time. During that time I have never seen a patient abused in any manner; I have never seen a patient struck or kicked by officers or attendants; I have been an attendant in the Hospital for the Insane at Jacksonville, for a year and a half; also in the Cook County Asylum, near Chicago, for a year and a half, and the management and treatment of patients in the Nebraska Hospital is fully as good, if not better, than the Hospitals mentioned above.

W. M. OYLER.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me, this twenty-sixth day of February, A.D. 1883.

[SEAL,]. A. K. WEBSTER,
Notary Public.

STATEMENT OF MRS. KATIE FORMAN.

LINCOLN, NEB., Feb. 26, 1883.

I am the daughter of Rev. W. R. Jones, Presiding Elder of Lincoln district, and have been a patient in the Nebraska Hospital for Insane for five months, from August to January 1st, 1883. During the time spent at the Hospital, I never saw or experienced anything but the most uniform kindness and gentle treatment from both officers and attendants. All patients have the privilege of making their requests or complaints personally to the Superintendent. I never saw him refuse to listen to them, and when practicable has always supplied all reasonable requests. Special care is always bestowed upon the sick, and home comforts given. Food is served to the patients well cooked and in great abundance and of very good quality. I have frequently dined at the Superintendent's table in company with other patients, and there is no material variation in the food from that furnished the wards. Mrs. Mathewson has been very kind to me, (and conse-

quently very dear), and is universally beloved by all. Her daily visits to the wards are anxiously watched for by the inmates, and she is greeted like a mother whenever she makes her appearance, thus giving her an opportunity of dispensing her theology, which is woven into her woof of life. Her life is a poem. It is the Paradise regained, Dr. Mathewson seems admirably adapted to the position he now occupies, keeping an ever watchful eye over everything connected with the Institution. I have not sufficient skill to express the indignation I feel at the charges made against so good and just a man as Dr. Mathewson.

MRS. KATIE FORMAN,
Wife of Prof. F. Lee Forman.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me this twenty-sixth day of February, A.D. 1883.

[SEAL.] A. K. WEBSTER,
Notary Public.

STATEMENT OF CLARENCE JUDD.

NEBRASKA HOSPITAL, Feb. 26, 1883.

I, the undersigned have worked in the Michigan Asylum for Insane (5) five years and (7) seven months, Kansas Asylum for Insane, (2) two years and (6) six months, St. Joseph, Missouri, Asylum, (2) two months and the Nebraska Hospital for Insane (7) seven months, can freely and fully say that the treatment at the Nebraska Asylum is just as good and in a great many instances *better* than either of the other asylums I have been employed in. Dr. Mathewson is kind to all patients admitted to the Hospital, is kind and courteous to each and every one whoever is placed under his care. As to his management of the Institution, cannot call it anything but *first-class.* While I have been here, have not seen any patient abused in any way, shape or form, neither *choked, struck* or *kicked* and I am satisfied that Dr. Mathewson would not tolerate such treatment

towards patients from any one in his employ if known to him. My position is night watch, the Doctor has been around with me at different times in the night to see that the patients were comfortable and well cared for.

Food is good and served in sufficient quantities.

Respectfully yours,

CLARENCE JUDD.

Subscribed in my presence and sworn to before me this twenty-sixth day of February A.D. 1883.

[SEAL.] A. K. WEBSTER,
Notary Public.

STATEMENT OF O. L. ANDERSON.

NEBRASKA STATE HOSPITAL FOR INSANE, February 26, 1883.

I am an attendant on first male ward. Have been an attendant here since December 29, 1882. I know Henry Hettrick, the patient who was said to have been abused at the mortar box. Mr. Hettrick was a patient on my ward (the first ward) from the twenty-third of January, 1883 until the twelfth of this (Feb.) month, when he was discharged. He (Hettrick) told me just after he was released from the ward that he hoped he would never need to be confined in the Asylum again but said he, a man might be put in many a worse plaee. I don't hold any grudge at any one here. I have been treated like a gentleman.

O. L. ANDERSON.

Subscribed in my presence and sworn to before me this twenty-sixth day of February, 1883.

Witness my name and notarial seal.

A. K. WEBSTER,
[SEAL.] *Notary Public.*

STATEMENT OF MISS M. BALDWIN.

Requested by Mrs. Mathewson who has for sometime (as I understand) represented the place of matron in the so-called

Insane Asylum of the State of Nebraska, to testify to the general good treatment of the so-called patients in said Asylum. I do with pleasure say that cleaner beds, cleaner rooms, better ordered dining room could not be found in a place of like kind. The sick are kindly and well cared for. I have never seen any coercion used that was not at the time necessary and no one could be kinder or more humane, than both Mr. and Mrs. Mathewson have been so far as I have had opportunity of observing. The trouble and fault finding which is not great among the inmates arising from the ignorance of the necessity of being kept for a time in seclusion. I am known here as Miss M. Baldwin, my clothing coming to that mark some of the time and am not detained against my will, paying five dollars a week for my board and making myself useful about the work. My stay was and is caused by trouble with the Indians rendering travel for me unsafe.

LINCOLN, Feb. 26, 1883.

Subscribed, and sworn to before me this twenty-sixth day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,
Notary Public.

STATEMENT OF EDWARD N. SEARLE.

LINCOLN, NEBRASKA, Feb. 26, 1883.

I have been an inmate of the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane, since October 28, 1882. My name is Edward N. Searle, age thirty-three, residence, North Platte, Lincoln county, Nebraska. My occupation for the last eleven years has been railroad conductor on the Union Pacific R. R. Since being an inmate here, I have been on the first and second wards. I have invariable been kindly treated by officers and attendants. The food (without exception) has been good, and furnished in sufficient quantities for the wants of all. Our beds consist of steel wire springs with hair mattresses, feather pillows, comforters,

blankets and spreads. They are neat, tidy and equal in comfort to any hotel of my experience. The wards are always kept in an orderly manner. The patients are not asked to do any labor beyond the ordinary duties of cleaning up, and this is at their own option. In seasonable weather we are allowed to go out for a walk each day in company with the attendant. From my observation patients are kindly and humanely treated by both officers and attendants. During the time that I have remained in the Hospital, I have never seen any abuse of patients in any manner whatever. We are given a sociable entertainment in dancing every Saturday night. The music furnished is good. On two occasions Dr. Mathewson has taken me to the city in the sleigh. We visited the State capitol, where I had the pleasure of meeting a number of friends. Evening entertainments are frequently given with the "magic lantern." I have always had full liberty in my correspondence with my friends. Letters are handed to the patients immediately after the arrival of the mail. As far as I know, everything is done for the comfort, well-being and happiness of the patients that can be under the circumstances. The above statement is a voluntary act on my part, and I am abundantly satisfied with my treatment.

EDWARD N. SEARLE.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me this twenty-sixth day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,

[SEAL.] *Notary Public.*

STATEMENT OF JOHN C. HALL.

February 26, 1883.

My name is John C. Hall; age 53 years. I am a brother-in-law of Bishop Clarkson of Omaha. My employment has been a bookkeeper in a banking house in Chicago, and then a lumber merchant in Omaha, Nebraska. I have been an inmate of the Hospital for the Insane at Lincoln, Nebraska, for the last two and one-half years. My treatment since my advent here has

been uniformly kind and considerate by Dr. H. P. Mathewson, by his family, and by every officer and employe of the Asylum. The treatment to patients has been kind and humane in a very marked manner, both in the house and out of doors. Having filled some important positions at the Asylum, my observation has been extensive. I have had opportunities of observing how the patients have been treated. I can say of my own knowledge that the patients have received the kindest attention. I have known on several occasions Dr. Mathewson to deny himself both food and sleep to minister to the wants of the unfortunate and helpless. I have never seen any patient abused. On the contrary, I have seen the kindest treatment to all within my range.

The above statement is voluntarily and cheerfully given to all who may be concerned.

JOHN C. HALL.

I have never seen a patient struck, cuffed, or choked since I have been in the institution.

JOHN C. HALL.

Subscribed in my presence, and sworn to before me this 26th day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,

[SEAL.] *Notary Public.*

STATEMENT OF MRS. ROBERT BROWN.

LINCOLN HOSPITAL, NEBRASKA, Feb. 26, 1883.

I will make a statement here in regard to my treatment. I have been here five months in the Hospital. I have been treated very kindly by Mrs. Mathewson and Dr. Mathewson, and the attendants, and all other patients treated the same. Our bedrooms are kept in the best of order and comfortable. Our food is of a good quality and a bountiful supply of it. My age is 38.

MRS. ROBERT BROWN.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 26th day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,

[SEAL.] *Notary Public.*

STATEMENT OF MISS MATTIE REED.

LINCOLN, Feb. 26, 1883.

I have been an inmate of this Hospital a year and six months, and I have been kindly treated by Dr. Mathewson and his wife, and also other officers and attendants. I have been on the first and second wards, and know that the patients have beeu treated kindly. The wards are neat and orderly. We have good food and plenty of it. My age is 23.

MISS MATTIE REED.

Subscribed in my presence and sworn to before me this 26th day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,
Notary Pnblic.

[SEAL.]

STATEMENT OF MARY ALLEN.

LINCOLN HOSPITAL, NEB., Feb. 26, 1883.

I have been an inmate of the Hospital five months. I have been kindly treated and all other patients by Mrs. Mathewson and Dr. Mathewson and the attendants. Our beds are comfortable, and kept clean also our rooms. Our food is cooked fresh every day, and vegetables every day for dinner, and a bountiful supply of it. Meals are three times a day.

MARY ALLEN,
Niece of Sidney Dillon, age 34 the 10th of March.

Subscribed in my presence and sworn to before me this 26th day of February, A.D. 1883.

A. K. WEBSTER,
Notary Public.

[SEAL.]

STATEMENT OF THOMAS BYRNE.

February 1, 1883.

Statement of Thomas Byrne. My age is about 32 years. Native of Ireland. Came to America June 20, 1880. I have worked

as an attendant in Bloomingdale Asylum, New York city, about seven months. I have also worked in Asylum at Chester, England, as an attendant for two years and a half. Have been employed in this Hospital since Jan. 17th, 1882. I wish to state in respect to treatment of patients in this Hospital as compared to others in which I have worked, that it is equally as good if not better considering the accommodations. I never have seen or known of any cruelty in the management of patients by either officers or attendants. When I began work here I was instructed by the Superintendant to treat the patients as kindly as possible, and have carried out those instructions as best I could under the circumstances.

THOMAS BYRNE.

I have heard workmen about the building tantalize the attendants with being cruel to the patients when they were doing nothing but what was necessary for the safety of the patients and the protection of the workmen from injury.

THOMAS BYRNE.

STATE OF NEBRASKA, }
Lancaster Co. }

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 1st day of February, A.D. 1883.

E. P. ROGGEN,
Secretary of State.

[SEAL.]

STATEMENT OF A. G. KENDALL.

My name is A. G. Kendall. I am 33 years of age. I am the Commissioner of Public Lands and Buildings, a member and President of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings, and have been since January 4, 1881. With regard to the Nebraska Hospital for the Insane, I will say, as President of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings, I am acquainted with the officers of the Institution, and have been acquainted with its general management for the past twenty-five months. During this time I have been a frequent visitor at the

Hospital in an official capacity for the special purpose of getting information relative to its immediate control by the physicians in charge. I have talked with patients therein confined, and with people after their recovery and discharge, and have never heard anything but the highest praise of the officers, and acknowledgment of kind treatment from all. The successful management of the Institution has been the subject of consideration at meetings of the Board of Public Lands and Buildings, and my observations at this time may be considered as an embodiment of the result of the visits and general information obtained by the Board in charge since January, 1881. Dr. Mathewson, the Superintendent, has been by the Board considered a gentleman of good executive ability, even-tempered, and kind-hearted, and a good disciplinarian, and has ever, so far as my knowledge or information extends, done, as an expert in his profession, what to him and the State Board has been considered the best that could be done for the welfare and comfort, safe-keeping and kind treatment of those intrusted to his care. He has never to my knowledge or information spoken a harsh, loud-voiced word in his government of insane patients, but his uniform manner has been the same quiet way you have noticed at this investigation. His government has been kind but firm. I am aware that the discipline enforced among attendants and employes, and the excessive work of attendants, has in some instances led to the voluntary retirement of such attendants and employes, and left upon the minds of such, unpleasant recollections of Hospital life. In no instance has any information of ill-treatment to patients been brought to the attention of the Board since I have been connected with it, and I am informed by Gov. Nance that no letters or complaints of abuses towards patients were ever received by or filed with him while he was Governor. Regarding the seventeen patients taken from Wyoming, I desire to say: The Board of Public Lands and Buildings have often felt the injustice done them by the Legislature in the matter of cutting down estimates closely calculated, and based upon past experience, and made by officers whose duty it was to know what money was needed for their several institutions. And while deficiencies have been contracted for fuel to keep warm, and living expense to feed, it has been the

custom to curtail what expense, and devise what ways and means possible. The fact that it was costing about $3.10 per week for each Nebraska patient, led the Board in charge to consent to the taking in a limited number of Wyoming patients at $6.00 and $7.00 per week. The money thus gained has been judiciously expended by consent and advice of the Board in charge, in fitting up basement rooms, and assisting in helping out where appropria tions were too small.

The motives of witness Hollenbeck, involves some questions concerning the construction of the two wings now being built to the Hospital building. The contractor whose foreman Mr. Hollenbeck is, has in connection with his business as contractor, been absent a great deal from the work on the Asylum. My attention was first called to some poor work on the building, and the delivery at the Asylum of certain materials not according to specifications by telephone by Dr. Mathewson. I immediately wrote the architect and Superintendent of construction, Mr. Roberts, to go at once to the Asylum and directed his attention to the matters spoken of by Dr. Mathewson. He visited the building, and reported to me verbally, that some of the work, especially the deafening in the floors was not being properly done, and that certain materials on the ground, referring especially to pipes in connection with steam heating apparatus and bath tubs, were not such as were called for. About this time, I spoke with the contractor, who told me he was willing to construct his building according to the plans and specifications, and in inside details just as Dr. Mathewson wanted it. That the deafening in the floors had not been fully understood before, but were now satisfactory, and that the contractor on steam heating, had been notified of improper sized pipes, and in conversation with him, I learned by intimation that Hollenbeck thought Dr. Mathewson was interfering with his, Hollenbeck's, business, or was disposed to find fault with some of the work being done. I have since conversed with Hollenbeck himself, and from his conversation, I became aware he had a grievance against Dr. Mathewson, and he told me that himself and others were engaged in trying to get Dr. Mathewson out of the Asylum. It is proper to add in this connection that the specifications for the new wings provide,

that the work shall be done to the satisfaction of the Superintendent of the Asylum.

A. G. KENDALL.

List of Discharged Employes.

J. B. Mickey, attendant, Nov. 16, 1877–March 30, 1878. Conspiring against Officers of Hospital.

John Preston, farm, Nov. 16, 1877, March 30, 1878. Cruelty to animals.

Robt. Norris, attendant, March 30, 1878. Carelessness with patients.

Wm. Boyle, attendant, March 30, 1878, June, 1878. Intemperance.

Flora Gordon, attendant, April 30, 1878, Sept. 1878. Inefficiency.

E. C. Pomeroy, attendant, May, 1878, July, 1878. Impudence to minor Officers.

Jennie Niblo, attendant, Sept. 1878. Negligence with patients.

W. H. Reynolds, attendant, Feb. 27, 1880. Intemperance.

Mary Kennedy, attendant, Nov. 16, 1877, Feb. 28, 1878. Abusing patient.

Frances Day, laundry, Nov. 1878, Feb. 1879. Improper conduct.

E. H. Loomis, attendant, 1879. Striking patient.

Nellie Cartwright, laundry, July 1879, Oct. 1879. Improper conduct.

J. A. Lyman, attendant, July, 1879, Aug. 1879. Striking patient.

Nobia Kountz, attendant, Dec. 1879, Feb. 1881. Carelessness with patients.

Alice Barton, attendant, Dec. 1879, May, 1879. Abuse of patient.

Mary Arter, dining room, June, 1880, Aug. 1880. Inefficiency.

Henry Todd, attendant, Dec. 1880, Feb. 1881. Neglect of duty.

Mary Todd, attendant, Dec. 1880, Feb. 1881. Inefficiency.

B. J. Downing, attendant, May, 1881, June, 1881. Inefficiency.

D. C. Tope, attendant, May 1881, Aug. 1881. Intemperance.

J. M. Olden, attendant, Oct. 1881, Dec. 31, 1881. Kicking patient.

E. E. Eastman, attendant, March 30, 1877, Nov. 1879. Violation of By-laws.

Peter Nelson, farm, Oct. 20, 1881, Feb. 10, 1883. Neglect of duty.

A. Tuxford, attendant, Feb. 1882, March, 1882. Intemperance.

Geo. Lewis, attendant, March, 1882, Aug. 1882. Striking patient.

O. P. Dotson, attendant, April, 1882, Aug. 1882. Inefficiency.

Lola Phelps, attendant, June, 1882, Aug. 1882. Abuse of patient.

Alice Martin, attendant, Aug. 1882, Aug. 1882. Abuse of patients.

O. H. Gilbert, attendant, Sept. 1, 1882, Jan. 1883. Striking patient.

Wm. Merrill, attendant, Sept. 1, 1882, Feb. 1883. Boasting of abusing patients.

E. H. Mansfield, attendant, Oct. 1882, Oct. 1882. Ineficiency.

Robt. Hart, attendant, March, 1879, May, 1879. Carelessness with patients.

NEBRASKA STATE HOSPITAL FOR INSANE—MONTHLY RECORD.

Work*.....A
Work on Ward.....B
Work in Dining Room.....C
On Ward.....D
Walking.....E

Yard.....F
Sick in Bed.....G
Extra Diet.....H
Fed.....K
Fed with Tube.....L

Restraint, day.....M
Restraint, night.....N
Restraint, day and night.....O
Covered Bed, night.....P
Covered bed, day and night.....R

Filthy, day.....S
Filthy, night.....T
Fits.....U
Chapel.....X
Unwell.....Y

*Includes sewing, knitting, labor on farm, at barn, in shops, etc.

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20	21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31
CHARLES HOFFMAN—																															
March, 1879	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	h	....	....	....	....
April, "	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	d	g	d	d	d	g
May, "	g	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	b	g	g	g	b	b	g	b	a	a	....
	g	g	d	d	g	g	d	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	g	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
HENRY HETTRICK—																															
August, 1882	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	f	f	f	f	f	f	f	....	t f	f	f	d	f	f	x f	f	f	f	....
September, "	f	f	x	f	f	f	f	f	....	x	f	f	f	f	f	f	f x	f	f	....	....	....	f	f x	f	f	....	....	....	....	....
October, "	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....
November, "	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	f	f	f	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	f	f	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....
December, "	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x
January, 1883	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	c	c	c	x e	....	....	....
JAMES C. PARKS—																															
December, 1882	....	....	....	....	a	a	a	....	....	....	h	....	....	....	....	....	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	c
January, 1883	....	....	a	a	b	b	b	g	b	d	d	x	....	....	d	y	x	c	....	....	c	c	b	x	b	b	b	c	b	b	x
	c	b	b	c	b	u	d	x	x	x	c	c	b	x	c	b	b	b	b	b	x	b	b	....	b	b	....	x	f	f	f
DORA STATELY—																															
October, 1880	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	....
November, "	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	d	d	d	d	d
December, "	d	e	e	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	x	c	c	c	c	c	c	x	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	d	d	....
	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	e	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	c	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d		d	d	d	d

NEBRASKA STATE HOSPITAL FOR INSANE—MONTHLY RECORD—*Continued.*

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20	21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31
DORA STATELY—*Continued.*																															
January, 1881	....	....	....	....	....	—	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	d	d	d	d	d	d	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	d	d	d	d	d	g	d	d	d	d	d	d	c	c	c
February, "	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	c	bc	c	c	bc	c	c	c	cb	....	....	....
March, "	c	c	c	c	c	x	c	c	c	c	c	c	d	c	c	c	c	c	c	x	c	c	c	c	c	c	x	c	c	c	c
April, "	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d
May, "	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d
June, "	d	a	a	a	d	g	gy	g	g	g	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	....
July, "	....	....	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	a	b	e
	d	d	d	d	d	d	a	e	e	e	e	e	e	e	d	d	x	d	e	a	e	d	e	e	e	d	e	a	e	e	x
August, "	....	....	....	....	y	b	....	....	a	....	....	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	e	e	....	....	....	....	....	y	....	....	....	....
	r	c	c	a	a	e	e	a	e	a	a	a	a	d	e	a	a	a	a	a	x	e	e	a	a	a	a	e	d	e	a
September, "	....	....	....	....	e	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	a	e	e	e	a	a	a	a	a	e	e	e	e	a	a	d	e	e	e	a	a	d	e	e	d	e	d	d	e	....
October, "	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	a	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	b	....	....	....	....	....	x	e
	e	d	e	a	a	a	e	d	d	b	b	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a
November, "	....	....	....	....	....	x	x	....	y	y	y	y	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	xe	....	....	....	....
	a	a	d	a	a	d	d	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	....
December, "	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	....	....	....
	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	d	a	a	a	a
February, 1882	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	y	y	....	....	....
	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	d	d	d	d	d	d	a	a	d	a	d	d	b	a	a	d	a	d	....	....	....
March, "	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	....	b	....	....	b	....
	a	a	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	d	a	d	a	a	a	a	a
April, "	b	....	b	....	....	b	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	yb	....	b	b	....	....	....	....	....	b	....	....	b	e	....
	a	b	a	a	a	a	a	a	b	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	b	....
May, "	b	b	b	b	....	....	....	b	....	....	b	....	....	....	b	....	y	yk	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	b	b	b
	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a
June, "	....	....	....	....	b	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	b	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	....
July, "	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	b	....	b	b	....	b	b	b	....	a	a	a	a	a	a	....	a	a	a	a	a	a	c	a	a	a	a	a	a	....	....
	a	b	a	a	a	a	a	a	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b
August, "	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	b	b	b	b	b	x	a	a	a	a	a	a	....	a	a	a	a	a	a	....	a	a	a	a	a	a	....	b	b	b	b
	a	a	a	a	a	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	b	a	a	a	a
September, "	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	d	d	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	....
October, "	....	b	....	....	b	....	....	x	..	....	y	y	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....	....	....	....	....	x	....	....
	b	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	d	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	b	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a
November, "	....	....	....	....	....	....	y	y	y	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....	....
	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	....
December, "	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	d
January, 1883	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	a	a	a	a	a	a	x	a	a	a	a	a	a	d	d	a	a

Copy of Report of Special Committee to Investigate Insane Asylum.

Mr. President:

Your special committee appointed to investigate charges of neglect and cruelty exercised by the Superintendent and employes of the Nebraska Insane Asylum towards patients therein confined, have had the subject matter of the resolution creating said committee under consideration, and desire to make the following report: The committee have examined fifty-six witnesses, the testimony elicited extending over a period of some four years.

The evidence of twenty-two witnesses establishes many acts of neglect, and in some instances great and excessive cruelty, exercised towards the male inmates therein confined. These acts of cruelty consisting of striking, kicking, and choking patients, have occurred at frequent intervals throughout the management of Dr. Mathewson. There is but little if any evidence tending to show that Dr. Mathewson personally knew at the respective times these acts of cruelty occurred that the same did occur, or were committed by the attendants in charge of the patients. But the committee is of the opinion that under vigilant, humane and proper management of the Asylum, such acts of cruelty could not and should not have occurred at all.

The committee examined thirty-four witnesses for and on behalf of the Superintendent of the Asylum. The witnesses thus examined were very generally employes or officers of the Asylum, or those who at some time had been employed in or in some way connected with the Asylum while under the management of Dr. Mathewson. These witnesses thus examined very generally testified that the management of the affairs of the Asylum was good—that few or no acts of neglect or cruelty had come under the observation of said witnesses, and that Dr. Mathewson was a vigilant and humane officer; but it will be observed from an inspection of the evidence, that most of the testimony related to the management of the female wards of the Asylum, and that it did not materially contradict or impeach spe cific acts of cruelty

sworn to by the various witnesses examined in support of the charges of neglect and cruelty on the part of Dr. Mathewson. The Compiled Statutes, section 16, page 301, provide for a Matron, who, under the direction of the Superintendent, and not otherwise, shall have the general supervision of the domestic arrangements of the Hospital, and do what she can to promote the comfort and restoration of the inmates. The evidence disclosed the fact that for a long period the services of a Matron was dispensed with at the Hospital. The committee is of the opinion that a Matron is a necessary employe of the Asylum, and is so contemplated by the statute; and it is the further opinion of the committee that the Superintendent of the Asylum has no legal power whatever to dispense with the services of a Matron, and to do so is a usurpation of power not warranted by the statute or the best interests of the Asylum. In view of the evidence adduced, the committee is of the opinion that the management of the Asylum by Dr. Mathewson has not been in accordance with law or with the best interests of that unfortunate class of our citizens for whose benefit the Asylum was established, and we are reluctantly forced to the conclusion that a change of management of the Asylum would subserve the best interests of the Institution, and we therefore recommend that such change be made at as early a day as practicable.

Your committee respectfully suggests that the evidence taken in this examination be printed; or, in the event that the Senate do not concur in this view, that then, and in that event, the Senate direct the Attorney-General to take charge of the testimony and preserve the same in his office, for further reference and consideration.

Very respectfully submitted,

A. H. CONNOR,
Chairman.

A. SCHOENHEIT.

[EXTRACT FROM SENATE JOURNAL.]

Senate Journal, February 24, 1883, at pages 30, 31, and 32.

"Mr. Reynolds moved that the report of the committee, together with the evidence, be referred to the Governor.

"Mr. Harrison offered the following as a substitute for the motion, which was accepted by Mr. Reynolds:

"WHEREAS, The Senate has not time to read, examine, or consider the evidence taken by the special committee to investigate the charges against the Hospital for the Insane, therefore,

"*Be it resolved,* That the Senate resolution for said investigation, and all the evidence and papers, be referred to the Governor and the Board of Public Lands and Buildings without recommendation, for such action as they shall deem best for the interests of the patients and the Institution.

"Mr. Harrison moved that the rules be suspended for the immediate consideration of the same, which motion was agreed to. Whereupon Mr. Harrison moved the adoption of the resolution.

"Pending consideration of which,

"On motion of Mr. Reynolds, the Senate took a recess until 2 o'clock P.M."

[EXTRACT FROM SENATE JOURNAL.]

Senate Journal, February 24, at pages 80, 81:

"Mr. Connor offered the following resolution:

"*Resolved,* That two thousand copies of the testimony taken by the committee appointed by the Senate to investigate the charges made against the proper conduct and management of the Hospital for the Insane by its officers, together with the report of said committee thereon, be printed; that five hundred of said printed copies be placed in the office of the Secretary of the State for the use of State officers, and that fifteen hun-

"dred copies be equally divided between the Senators and House "of Representatives for distribution.

"On motion of Mr. Connor, the rules were suspended and res- "olution adopted."

Senate Journal, February 26, page 20:

"Mr. Harrison called up the resolution offered by him in ref- "erence to the report of the special committee appointed to in- "vestigate charges against the management and treatment of "inmates of the Hospital for the Insane, and offered the follow- "in addition thereto.

"*Resolved*, That the printing of the report of the special com- "mittee appointed to inquire into alleged acts of neglect and "cruelty on the part of the Superintendent and employes of the "Nebraska Insane Asylum, exercised towards the inmates of "said Asylum, be under the direction of the Governor; and that "all the testimony be referred to him, and that when said report "is so printed, the Governor be requested to distribute said re- "port to the members of the Senate in the proportion and man- "ner heretofore ordered by resolution of the Senate.

"On motion of Mr. Harrison, the rules were suspended, and "tbe resolutions adopted."

SENATE CHAMBER,
LINCOLN, February 26, 1883.

To His Excellency Governor Dawes:

I am directed by the Senate to inform you that they have passed the following resolution:

Resolved, That two thousand copies of the testimony taken by the committee appointed by the Senate to investigate the charges made against the proper conduct and management of the Hospital for the Insane by its officers, together with the report of said committee thereon, be printed; that five hundred of said printed copies be placed in the office of the Secretary of State for the use

of State officers, and that fifteen hundred copies be equally divided between the Senators and House of Representatives for distribution. Also

Resolved, That the printing of the report of the special committee appointed to inquire into the alleged acts of neglect and cruelty on the part of the Superintendent and employes of the Nebraska Insane Asylum exercised towards the inmates of said Asylum, be under the direction of the Governor, and that all the testimony be referred to him, and that when said report is so printed, the Governor be requested to distribute said report to the members of the Senate in the proportion and manner heretofore ordered by resolution of the Senate.

Your concurrence in the above is respectfully asked.

GEO. L. BROWN,
Secretary of the Senate.

INDEX.

	PAGE
Resolutions calling for investigation	3
Testimony, Aldrich O. T.	25
" Alexander S. J.	285
" Anderson O. L.	160
" Ashton Wm.	370
" Baird Capt. C. N.	342
" Bartlett G. M.	377
" Bergstrom Charley	12
" Brink Kate	208
" Brostrom Aleck	10
" Buchtel S. A.	327
" Byers Hattie	305
" Carnahan Thomas	16
" Carter Charles, (colored)	199
" Christner R. C.	132
" Connelly T. M.	248-264
" Dawson Matilda E.	76
" Dille C. F.	28
" Druse O. M.	58
" Gilmore Sarah Miss	216-356-364
" Green Will H.	244-360
" Hawkins Belt	23
" Hay Dr. J. T.	171-302-365
" Hildebrand Frederick	47
" Hoffman Annie	163
" Hollenbeck A. P.	31
" Hooker Robert	367
" Houser Anton	4
" Jordan Thomas	269
" Kelliher C. B.	154
" Kuller Christ	6
" Lawson E.	72
" Lennon James	43
" Manard N. N.	54
" Masterman Henry	287
" Mathewson Dr H. P.	80-303
" Mathewson Mrs. Dr.	265
" McBride J. C.	348

PAGE

Testimony, McCurdy Mrs. Mary 374
" Meter William B. 325
" Moore Major 14
" Nelson Edwin 41
" Nelson Peter 50
" Nettles Andrew 20
" Passmore Mary 227
" Perkins J. R. 332
" Rector H. C. 323
" Robinson John 18
" Seeley Cora 261
" Sisson Mary 65
" Shaver Henry K. 316
" Smith Rosa 230
" Statley Henry 290
" Stazell Wm 254
" Sturm Charles 8
" Taylor L. F. 233
" Walker John 74
" Willard Charles H. 287
" Young Wm. B. 375
Statement of the Defense 383
" " Allen Mary 393
" " Anderson O. L. 389
" " Baldwin Miss M. 389
" " Brown Mrs. Robert 392
" " Byrne Thomas 393
" " Clark J. T. 385
" " Evans Thomas A. 386
" " Forman Katie 387
" " Hall John C. 391
" " Judd Clarence 388
" " Kendall A. G. 394
" " Oyler Wm. M. 386
" " Reed Miss Mattie 393
" " Ritchie Thomas W. 385
" " Searle Edward H. 390
" " Shelley Mrs. M. 384
List of discharged employees 397
Monthly Record 399
Report of Investigating Committee 401
Extracts from Senate Journal 403
Communication, Secretary of the Senate 404